

THE
HISTORY
OF

That most Eminent Statesman,
Sir JOHN PERROTT,
Knight of the *BATH*,
AND
Lord Lieutenant of *IRELAND*.

CONTAINING

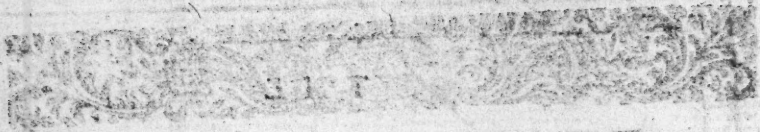
- I. An ACCOUNT of his Descent, Birth, and Behaviour in the Courts of King *HENRY* the *Eighth*, and King *EDWARD* the *Sixth*.
- II. His TRAVELS into *France* with the Earl of *Southampton*, his Return to *England*, and Promotion by Queen *ELIZABETH*.
- III. The REBELLION of *Fitz-Morris* suppressed, 1572.
- IV. The remarkable ATTAINDER of *JAMES*, Viscount *Baltinglas*, and his FOUR Brothers, 1586.
- V. The MANNER of *Sir John Perrott's* Departure from *Ireland*, 1588.
- VI. His Fatal CATASTROPHE; His Last WILL and TESTAMENT and his DEATH in the Tower, 1592.

Now first Published from the Original Manuscript, written about the latter End of the Reign of Queen Elizabeth.

Per varios casus, per tot discrimina rerum. Virgil.

L O N D O N :
Printed in the Year, M.DCC.XX.VIII.

Price Six Shillings.



HISTORY OF THE READER.

THE Original Manuscript
of which the Reader is
now provided with a most
valuable copy was discovered
long before, and which it is
again truly maintained

the plan of the work
of the Editor of the
of the

of the



TO THE
READER.

THE *Original Manuscript*,
of which the Publick is
here presented with a most
faithful *Copy*, was communicated
from *Ireland*, and thither it is
again safely transmitted.

It's plain Denomination was,
only, *The Life, Deedes and Death*
of Sir JOHN PERROTT,
A 2 the

TO the READER.

the Author unknown, and the Age of it, as near as could be conjectured by the best Judges, the Time assigned in this *Title-Page*.

THE *Political Affairs* of that Kingdom, for twenty Years inclusive, from 1572 to 1592, are herein more Authentically related than will be met with in any other Historian : And, the unparalleled Efforts of this Great Man's Enemies are a sufficient *Memento* for all *Prime Ministers*, not only how *little Security* is to be placed in COURTS, but how *little Confidence* is to be put even in PRINCES themselves, as was fully manifested by his undeserved Fate,

It

To the READER,

IT is only necessary to acquaint
the learned World, that they stand
indebted for this valuable Piece
to RICHARD RAWLINSON,
L. L. D. and F. R. S. late of St.
John's College, Oxon.

Nov. the 1st.

1727.



Rawlinson D.1031

Copies by Rawlinson of papers regarding Sir
J. Perrot's trial

- (1) A true m^o of the articles objected ag^t Sir
J. Perrot - 11 April 1592
- (2) A brief of the objections ag^t Sir J. Perrot
answered
- (3) Acct of his trial 27 April & of the
proceedings on the day of judgment ag^t him
16 June

Not by Rawlinson May 23 1728 from
the Mrs relating to Sir John Perrot

Mss. 9766 - presented by Thomas Perrot of
St Johns in 1727

Letters of Sir John Perrot to the Queen
& her chief ministers - copies 257 leaves
11 July 1584 - 26 May 1586



THE
Author's Preface.

PLUTARCH, that excellent Philosopher, and famous Historian, writtinge the *Life of Alexander the Great*, sayth, That when he came to the Tombe of Achilles, he pronounced hym to be most happye, because he had so trew a Friend as Patroclus, whilst he lived, and soe excellent an Herald to emblason his famous Deedes after his Death, as was Homer. And suerely, to say the Truth, there is noethinge that maketh Men more hardie, or desirous to attempt Heroical Enterprises, than the Opinion of purchasing Renowne whilst they live, and to have the same recorded when they are dead; for there are but three Spurres and Incitements to virtuous Actions: The first is Praise, the second is Emulation, and the third is Reward.

B

The

ii The Author's Preface.

The first provoketh Men many Times (with-
out any other Incoragement) to assay high and
honorable Actions, but especially it elevateth
theyr Myndes to attempt more difficult Mat-
ters, when there are others of lyke Qualitie
and Condition, who with a studious Emula-
tion doe strive to excell and exceede one ano-
ther. But most of all, Men are moved to
undertake any adventrous Actions for the
publicke Weale, when with Prayse and Emu-
lation there is joyned such Hope of Rewards
and Recompence, that he which doth excell
the rest, shall be recompenced and advanc-
ed above the rest. It is written of Themis-
tocles, That although he was very rioteous-
ly and lasciviously given in his Youth, con-
suming all his Time in Banqueting and in
Dalliances; yet when once he herde the Re-
nown which Miltiades had by the famous
Victory he obteyned at the Battle of Mara-
thon; then presently Themistocles began to
betake hymself unto another Course of Life,
still studying, by doing the lyke Deedes, to
purchase the lyke Prayse, Honor and Pre-
ferment, as Miltiades had atchieved. Insoe-
much that some of his familiar Frendes, find-
ing such sodayne Alteration in his Actions
asked

The Author's Preface. iii

asked hym how it came to passe that he had so much changed his former Course of Life in soe shorte a Time? To whom he answered, That ever synce his Eares had receved the Renowne of Miltiades's Fame and Victory, he could not sleepe soundly, nor should not take his perfect Rest, untill he had by some such worthy Actions atteyned to the lyke Advancement of Honor and Dignitie: And so afterwards, Themistocles did become admirable in his Victories against Xerxes and others.

Here was Prayse, Emulation, and Expectation of Recompence; the Provokers of hym to attempt and accomplish noble Deedes in the Defence of his Contrie; whereby, as in other the lyke Examples, it is evident that the Prayse, Renowne, and Reward of worthy Men, do serve as an exceedinge Incoragement to stirre up the Thoughtes of generous mynded Persones to indevor that which may make them famous, and theyr Contrie fortunat. All which Examples of rewarding and advauncing the worthy and well-deserving Men, and of perpetuating theyr Memorials, is no where so soone and so certaynly

iv The Author's Preface.

to be found, as in Histories truly written, which Cicero calleth the Witness of Time, the Light of Trueth, the Life of Memory, the Mistress of Life, and the Messenger of Antiquitie: For there is nothing that gives us more lively Examples of Things done as well before, as in our Times, of Dangers avoyded, of Vice punished, of Virtue advanced, of Rashness runninge into Confusion, of Wisdom preventing many Perills, of Envy first devouringe others, and then consuming the Subjects that possessed it, of Greatness attended with Dangers, and of Securitie, pressed with sodayne Misery. All which the Narration of trew and faithful written Histories doth best declare and depaynt; and more particularly, the lively Description of worthy Mens Deedes in several Nations (which are of most Note, and do undertake the greatest Affayres according to their several Places and Callinges) may serve as fittest Examples for others to direct their Courses by: For it is trew which the great and greatly to be extolled (1) Philo-

(1) Aristot. 1. Ethic.

The Author's Preface. v

sopher telleth us, That Examples do more move us to Imitation than Wordes or Persuasions: And it is as true, that in humane Actions we do less believe Wordes than Deedes. Therefore Examples and Presidents of other Mens Deedes, declared truly by Historicall Narration, are most profitable, and the best Patternes to follow or to flie. And of all Examples, those doe move us most to Imitation, and do leave the deepest Impression in Mens Minds and Memories, which do set forth the Actions of Men who lived in, or neere theyr own Times. The Fruite of reading which, ought (as one (2) saith) to be this, that we should imitate those Things which we allowe in them, and lay up theyr Sayinges, which we wonder at, in Store for our own Use; whereby Men might reape greate Profitte by the Observation of generall and particular Actions. And I see no Reason but that our Contriemen of this our English Nation, might reap much Benefit by one another's Examples, as well as the Grecians and other Nations did

(2) Macrobian. Sat. Lib. vi.

vi . The Author's Preface.

gayne Knowledge and Honor by reading, and carrying in Remembrance the Histories and Narrations of one another's Lives, Deedes, and Sayinges: For the Greekes were so studious of Knowledge, and so desirous to imitate the worthie Actes and Sayinges of their Predecessors, that they did not only record every worthie Deede, but also every wise Sayinge or Sentence that did proceed from any Man of Note or good Name amongst them. The Romans, so much renowned both in Warres and in Peace, caused theyre High-Priest, called Pontifex Maximus, to commit unto Tables every Yere, the chiefe Actes of the Commonweale, termed Annales Maximi; and these were set up to be seene, whereby the People might be informed what was done, said, or written, worthy of Observation; which Custome continued untill the Time of Publius Mutius theyre High-Priest. The lyke Care the Brytanes (being the auncient Inhabitants of this Land) had to keepe trew Recordes or Registers of Gentlemens Armes, Pedigrees and Actions; for which Porpose there were Statutes and Decrees made by divers of the Princes of Wales, but especially by Grif-
fith

The Author's Preface. vii

fith ap Conan, Prince of North Wales, which did prescribe and appoynt what Reward these Bardes, being theyr Heralds, should have, at whose Hands they should have it; and what Manner of Men they should be, both for Sufficiency of Knowledge and Honesty in Conversation. The Indians in auntient Times had theyr Gymnosophisti, who did not only deliver the Rites and Ceremonies unto the People, but did preserve all their memorable Acts unto Posterity. And it is farther found out in the late Discoveries of the Indies, that the rude and illiterate People have to this Day a kind of Custome to keepe in Memorie the most worthy Deedes of all Men amongst them, that have been done for many Yeres before; which by perusal of certayne Characters made in the Barkes of Trees, and Knottes tied upon Stringes, they can as redily deliver, as if the same had byn penned, and leste in perfect Writtinge unto them. If then in antient Times the reformed Commonweales of Greece, the renowned Monarchie of Rome, and almost all other Nations of far less glorie and fame, have been so forward in setting forth the honorable Actions of theyr Na-

viii The Author's Preface.

tion and Ancestors ; and also in describing the noble Deedes of every worthy Man in theyr Contries and Commonweales. It may be marvelled why the Historians of our later Times, especially those of our Englishe Nation, have not taken the lyke Paynes, or used the lyke Diligence, in publishing the general Accidentes of theyr Contrie, and the particular prayse-worthy Actions of theyr Contrie-men ; whereby it may be made known unto the World, that all the worthy Men were not borne, and all the renowned Deedes were not done in the first Age of the World. For that were to discourage heroicall Spiritess from attempting the lyke Enterprizes, and attayning to the lyke Honor : For I am persuaded, that even our latter Times have afforded Men of as great Magnanimitie, Courage, Wisdom and Experience, as ever the former flourishing Ages of the World have afforded. Yet some perchance will say, that to write the Lives of particular Men, is a Thing as unnecessarie, as it is unusuall : To whom I may answer, that thoe it be somewhat unusuall, yet is it nothinge unnecessarie, but rather very profitabell. For as it is a Rule in Philosophie, that we cannot come to Generalls

The Author's Preface. ix

neralls but by Particulars ; so it is as true in Reason and Policie, that particular Examples do better informe and instruct us, in the ordering of our selves, and the governinge of others, than the Observation of general Actions ; the Groundes whereof are fallible, because the Circumstances are diverse and variable : For as in Conjunction of the Partes, the Body naturall and politick has his greatest Force and Strength : So in the severinge and apte distinguishing of Parts, the Sense hath his greatest Power. Therefore this History of a particular Man's Life is here penned ; partely, that out of the particular Accidents, Adventures and Revolutions of his Fortunes, general Observations may be gathered by such as shall reade the same ; and partely, that to manifest such Matters as are not commonly knowen in the Course of his Services, and the Varietie of his Fortunes, wherein the indifferent and discrete Reader may find divers Things worthy of Observation, concerning the Course of Sir John Perrott's Life ; as his Carriage in Youthe, and in riper Age, the fortunate Success of his Employments, the continual Crossings of his Adversaries, and the State of Things may be

x The Author's Preface.

be somewhat discerned of the Times where-
in he lived; which Narration, tho' it be not
here delivered with soe graceful a Style, or
extraordinary Invention, as is most affected
and effectuall to please and satisfie the Rea-
der; yet may it be truly avowed, that the
Desier of the Writer is to answer the Expec-
tation of the honest, and not willingly to
offend any by detracting from the Livinge,
or adding any undeserved Praise unto the
Dead; for the one is dishonest, the other is
vayne and unprofitable. For the certayntie
of what is here sett downe, although the
Writer cannot say he was an Eie-Witnesse
of all, yet that which he hath not seen as a
Witnesse, he hath either received from such
of sufficient Credit, as are for the most part
alive (1) to justifie theyr Informations, or else
it is drawen forth of Letters, or other au-
thenticall Writings yet extant. But there are
divers Things here omitted, which were
done by Sir John Perrott, and worthy of Note;
as the managinge of his divers Quarrells with
greate Personages, and other the lyke youth-

(1) This MS. as appears by the Character, was
wrote about the End of Q. Elizabeth.

The Author's Preface. xi

ful Partes by hym performed, wherein he never received any Disgrace, but rather gayned greate Reputation. Yet because there is noe purpose to lay any Imputation on his Adversaries, and for that the Recital thereof will not benefit the Reader soe much as Matters of greater Moment wherein he was employed; therefore such his particular Controversies and Quarrels shall be silenced: For the rest of his Life, here have you the Passages of many Particulars, written with a plain Style, and a single Heart, affecting no Prayse nor other Reward; but the indifferent Censure of such as be Judiciall and Honest.



THE



THE
LIFE,
DEEDES and DEATH
OF

Sir John Perrott, Kt.



It is the Wont of all good Writers of Histories to begyn with his Birth and Linage, whose Life and Deedes they do discribe; in observinge of which Rule, I may not neglect to place the Discent of *Sir John Perrott* in equal Rank with the auntientest and best borne

borne Gentlemen of this Kingdom, his Name and Auncestors having matched with divers honorable and noble Families. By his Mother, he came out of the Lord *Barckley's* Howse, (a Howse very honorable and auntient, though not so fortunate as heretofore it hath byn) his Mother being the Daughter of *Maurice*, Lord *Barckley* his Brother. Her Prayse I cannot altogether over-passe, she being in her Time a Lady of greate Virtue, Wisdom and good Government. Sir *John Perrott*, by his Father's Line, proceeded from an auntient and well-knowen Linage and Name, which had continued in *Pembrockeshier* above four hundred Years; so that there were divers Knights of his Howse, and not any of his Auncestors during all that Time, but lived in Reputation equall with the best Sorte of Gentlemen in that Countrie wherein they continued; for in fourteen Discents, half of them married with Heiresses, and had good Inheritance by theyr Matches: Such was the Favour of the Most Highest extended towards this Posteritie, as to others,

thers, to the Ende that they might prayse his divine Majesty.

AND that this may appear to be a Truth, and no fayned Fable, here followeth the lineal Discent and Pedegree of Sir *John Perrott*, and his Auncestors, from theyr first Arrival into *Pembrockeshire*.

PERROTT came out of *Normandy* into *England* with *William* the Conqueror, as it appeareth by the Chronickles, and by the Recordes of *Battayle Abbey*.

1. *STEPHEN Perrott* came into *Pembrockeshire* in the Rayn of King *Henry* the First, and he married with *Ellynor* Lady of *Istington*, Daughter and sole Heyre of *Merchion ap Rice*, being the fourth Discent from *Howell Dda*, Kinge of *South Wales*, and the *Lycurgus* or Lawmaker of that Land.

2. *SIR Andrew Perrott*, Knight, the Sonne of *Stephen Perrott*, of *Istington*, married *Jonett Mortimer*, Daughter of
Ralph

Sir John Perrott, Kt. 15

Ralph Lord Mortimer, who was afterwards Earle of *March*, whose Mother was *Gladis Dee*, Daughter to *Llewellyn ap Forworth* Kinge of *South Wales*. This *Sir Andrew Perrott* builded the Castell of *Herberth* in *Pembrockeshier*, and placed there a Garrison of *Flemyns*, who were sent into that Shier.

3. *WILLIAM Perrott*, Esquier, of *Istington*, married *Margaret*, the Daughter of *Sir Walter Herefford*, Knight.

4. *PETER Perrott*, Esquier, of *Istington*, married the Daughter of *Cainston*, in the Countie of *Pembrock*.

5. *STEPHEN Perrott* of *Istington*, Esquier, married *Mably Castellton*, Daughter and Heyer of *Castellton* in the sayd Countie.

6. *JOHN Perrott* of *Istington*, Esquier, married *Jonett Joyce*, Daughter and Heyer to *Sir John Joyce* of *Prendlegast*, Knight.

7. *PETER*

16 *The LIFE of*

7. *PETER Perrott of Istington, Esquier, married Ales, Daughter and Heyer to Sir Richard Harold of Haroldston, Knight.*

8. *STEPHEN Perrott of Istington and Haroldston, Esquier, married Ellen, Daughter and Heyer of John Howell, of Woodstock, Esquier.*

9. *SIR Thomas Perrott, Knight, of Istington and Haroldston, married Alice, Daughter and sole Heyer to John Picton, Esquier, by whom divers Discents of Inheritances came to the Perrotts.*

10. *THOMAS Perrott, Esq; of Istington and Haroldston, married Jonett, Daughter to John Wise, Esquier.*

11. *SIR William Perrott, Knight, of Istington and Haroldston, married Margaret, Daughter of Sir Henry Wogan of Wiston, Knight, whose Mother was Sister to William Herbert, the first Earl of Pembrock of that Name.*

12. *SIR*

12. *SIR Owen Perrott*, Knight, of *Istington* and *Haroldston*, married *Catheryn Poynes*, Daughter to *Sir Robert Poynes*, Knight: His Mother was Daughter to *Anthony Woodvill*, Erle *Rivers* and *Seales*.

13. *THOMAS Perrot*, Esquier, of *Istington* and *Haroldston*, married *Mary*, Daughter and Heyer to *James Barckley*, Esquier, second Sonne of *Morice Lord Barckley*.

SIR John Perrot, Knight, the unfortunate Subject of this sad and tragical History, married first with one of the Daughters unto *Sir Thomas Cheyney*, Knight, Lord Warden of the *Cinque-Portes*, and Sister to *Henry*, Lord *Cheyney*, by whom he had *Sir Thomas Perrot*, Knight: The rest of his Children were by other Venters.

SIR John Perrot, was a Man in Stature very tall and bigg, exceeding the ordinary Stature of Men by much, and almost equal to the mightiest Men that
C lived

lived in his Time: His Body was very compact, and proportionable through all the Partes: As he did exceed most Men in Stature, so did he in Strength of Body. His Hair was Alborne, untill it grew gray in his elder Yeares. His Countenance full of Majestie, his Eye marvelous percing, and carrying a commanding Aspect, infomuch that when he was angrie, he had a very terrible Visage or Looke; and when he was pleased, or willing to shew Kindness, he then had as amiable a Countenance as any Man: All which, as many as knew hym can well testify for a Truth; in this resembling *Augustus Caesar*, who, as it is written of hym, had so great a Majestie in his Eye and Countenance, percing like the Sun-Beams, that a Soldier beholding hym, could not continue, but retired back, saying, That he was not able to indure the Brightness and Majestie of his Eies.

HIS Conditions, and Qualities of his Mynde were answerable, and did keepe a kynd of Correspondence with those of his

his Bodie: For as he did surpasse most Men in Greatness and Comliness of his Stature; so did he surmount the most Part of Men of his Time, in the Greatness and Magnanimitie of Mynd; the Greatness of his Body and his Mynd seemed to strive which should grace him most, for he was of an undaunted Spirite, never regarding his Adversarys, were they never so many or so great. In Time of Danger he shewed hymselfe alwayes resolute and valiant; he had a very sharpe Witt, and was (as may be sayd) naturally wise, for though he were not learned in the Sciences, yet would he give as good a Reason for Matters of Experiment, as most Men. And as he had in hym many excellent Partes, as Magnanimitie, Valour, Ripeness of Judgment, Understanding of the Languages, as the *French*, *Spanish*, and the *Italian*, Judgment in the Warres, in Home Government, in forayne States, in courtly Carriage, and in most Matters that a Man not professing Learning could comprehend; soe had he some Defectes (else had he not byn Flesh and

C 2 Blood)

Blood) as namely, he was by Nature very choloricke, and could not brooke any Crosses, or dissemble the least Injuries, although offered by the greatest Personages, whereby he procured to hymselfe many and mightie Adversarys, and in the End, such as wrought his Overthrow; although, even 'tyll then (what by the Justness of his Cause, the Clearness of his Conscience, and Resolution of his Mynde) he supported himselfe agaynst all his Adversarys, being many and great. In Anger he would sometimes deal roughly and severly, even with them he loved best, but that being once pacified, he would easily forget his former Displeasure; and as long as any Man did contend with hym, he would use all Opposition he could by the Sword or by Law; but if Submission were offered by his Inferior, or Reconcilliation by his Equall, he would as readily receive it as any Man. He would (being moved to Wrath) sweare too much, which proceeding partly from Custome, and partly from Choller, he could hardly refrayne it when he was provoked. Also he
was

was adicted to that Sine whereto Men are by Nature enclined ; and although he were not that Way altogether soe unmeasurable in his Desiers as many Men are, nor did not maintayne it with such publick Ostentation and Defence as some Men do, yet did he offend so farre in that Kynde, as it drew God's Displeasure towards hym, which (if Men may pronounce God's Judgments) was the Cause of his Ruine, he being otherwise cleare of any notable Crime in all the Course of his Life. He was in his Youth prodigall, but ariving to riper Age, he grew frugall, and yet not soe savage, but that he regarded his Honor before Profitt, and measured both by the Habillitie of his Estate, which he would not exceed, nor yet live under the highest Countenance of his Degree and Calling : For he mayntayned the Parte rather of a Nobleman then of a Knight, for the Space of Forty Yeres, in Retinew, in Howse-keepinge, and in all other Respects. Yet did he manage his Estate soe providently, as he would make the most of his owne with Rea-

son; (and without Injurie to any) he improved his Lands to a high Rate, yet soe as his Tenants might live on it, and under hym, and tho' he were therefore somewhat complayned on in his Life-tyme, yet there are none of his Tenants but would be glad to take Leases therof now, and pay somewhat more for it at the same Rent, which of him they might have had without Fine, but never sought it, because he did not displace any that were able and willing to pay theyr Rents and Duties: for synce his Death, such as have had to do with his Living, have improved that which by hym was thought to be hardly rented before. He was very firme and faythful unto his Frendes; and if any of them had done amisse, or had offended hym, he would be sure to tell hym of it in the sharpest Manner; but if any other Man would go about to agravate any such Matter agaynst his Frendes, he would first hear it, and if there were Cause, he would shame his Frende; but otherwise he would answer for hym as much as might be. He was verie iuste and unspotted
for

Sir John Perrott, Kt. 23

for Bribery, which he could not abyde in any Man, nor never was tainted with it by his greatest Adversarys. In Causes that concerned Right or Wronge (wherin he had to doe) he was very upright, and void of all Partiallitie; yea, if his neerest Frend or Kinsman were a Partie: Pirates he could never endure, but did prosecute them with all his Power, when they came upon those Costes where he dwelte, or had to doe. To conclude, his Virtues were many, and his Faltes were not to be excused or silenced; for besides those Faltes which have already bin touched, he was high-mynded, and made no Accompt of any Man which he thought did not love hym; neither could his Heart be thoroughly humbled, untill his last Adversitie and extreame Disaster, which brought hym Home from the World to hymselfe, and unto God.

NEXT unto the Resitall of *Sir John Perrott's* Birth and Conditions, his Education requireth a speciall Place of Remembrance, which was with the best, did best befitt his Callinge and

State in Learning, and other Gentlemanlyke Exercifes, untill he arived unto the Age of Eighteen, or thereabouts, at which Time he was sent up to *London*, unto the Marques of *Winchester's* House, then Lord-Treasorer of *England*, which was about the xxxvith Yere of Kynge *Henry* the Eight his Raigne: Whether when he came, there was at that Time in the Marques his Howse, the Erle of *Oxford*, and the Lord of *Abergeveny*; the Erle was effeminate, but the Lord of *Abergeveny* was soe fierce and hasty a yong Nobleman, that no Servant or Gentleman in that Howse could continew long quiet, but he would quarrell with them upon any small Cause, 'tyll that Mr. *Perrott* came thither, whom the Gentlemen and Servingmen percevinge to be of a bold Spirit, comely Stature, good Strength, and seminge corageous, they then told the young Lord of *Abergeveny*, That there was a yonge Gentleman come to the Howse who would match hym. Is there such a one, sayd he, let me see hym? And so comminge where Mr. *Perrott* was, for the first Salutation

lutation he asked hym, What, Sir, are you the kyll-Kow that must mach me? No, said Mr. *Perrott*, I am no Bucher, but if you use me no better, you shall finde I can give a Bucher's Blow. Can you soe, sayd he, I will see that?, And so being both angry, they buckled, and fell to Blowes, in Trial and Continuance whereof, the Lord *Abergeveny* found that he had his Hands full of hym, and was rather over-mached in Strength, and had no Advantage of hym in Stomack, whereby he was willing to be parted from hym: So a Haward, the Serving-men, and other Gentlemen in the Marques his Howse (when they found the young Lord of *Abergeveny* unrulie) would still threaten hym with Mr. *Perrott*. At length they grew into a great League of Friendship, insomuch that they would seldom be assunder, untill once they both determined to make a kynde of Banquett, and to invite their Friends thereto. But being not so rich as to be Owners of a Cuppbord of Plate, they provided good Store of Glasses. Before their Guyfts came, they fell into some
Con-

26 *The LIFE of*

Contention, and so to Blowes, that they tooke the Glasse and break them about one another's Ears, that when the Guyfts invited came thither, they found (instead of Clarett-Wine) Blood besprinkled about the Chamber. Thus that Banquett was spoyled, the two hot Youths losse their Friends Thankes, and brake the League that was begunne betwixt them.

SHORTLY after, it was Mr. Perrott's Fortune to go into *Southwark* (as it was supposed, to a Place of Pleasure) taking but a Page with hym, where he fell out with two of the Kinges Men, being Yomen of the Crowne, which were such as they call them now that be of the Guard to the Queene. They both drew on hym, and fought with him, against whom he defended hymself so valiantly, and was hurt, that the Kinge being then at *Winchester-Howse*, near that Place, was tolde how a yonge Gentleman (havinge no Hayer on his Face) had fought with two of his Majesties Servants. Which the King hearing, and being desirous to see hym, sent for hym, demand-
ed

Sir John Perrott, Kt. 27

ed his Name, Countrie and Kindred. This being boldly by hym related, it pleased the King very well to see so much Valour and Audacitie in so yonge a Man, and therefore he willed hym to repair to the Court, where he would bestow a Place and Preferment on hym. But not long after, it pleased God to call Kinge Henry from this earthly Kingdom, and so Mr. *Perrott* lost that hoped for Preferment, remayning for a Time, untill towards the Coronation of King *Edward*, at the Marques of *Winchester's* Howse, with the Erle of *Oxford*, the Lord of *Abergeveny*, and other yonge Noblemen and Gentlemen of his Yers, with whom he spent the Time in such Exercises untill then, as Youth is accustomed unto, for eche Age of Man hath his severall Disposition and Inclination, according to that which the Poet alleageth, (*viz.*)

Diversos diversa juvant, non omnibus annis

Omnia conveniunt, res prius apta nocet.

Exultat lenitate puer, gravitate Senectus,

Inter utrumque manens stat juvenile decus.

That

That is,

Diverse Men do diversly delight, not all alyke,

The first that fitt, do afterwarde dislyke.

The Child loves Levitie, old Age likes Gravitie,

'Twixt both the middle Age makes Decencie.

See this yonge Gentleman continued the Course of his young Yeres, untill the Death of King Henry the Eight, and even about that Time his Noneage expired.

As soon as King Henry had finished the Course of this frayle Life, Mr. Perrott came unto Kinge Edward's Court, where, for the extraordinary Comliness of his Personage, and for the Forwardness of his heroicall Spirite the yonge Prince (of exceeding Pietie, and happie Memory) tooke such Lyking to hym, that he caused hym to be made (together with the Erle of Ormond, and others) one of the Knights of the Bath at his Coronation, being a Dignitie which was not wont to be bestowed but on Men of honoura-

Sir John Perrott, Kt. 29

honorable Birth, good Livelyhood, and speciall Expectation. The yonge Kinge had a very good Opinion of Sir *John Perrott*, and so did he purchase the good Liking of the Court, and in short Time gayned a speciall Reputation, as well by yelding Conformitie to the Courses and Commandments of the King and his Counsell, as by his Comliness of Personage, Valour, Activitie, Strength, and Expertnes in Actes of Chivalry, as Tylte, Turney, Barriers, and the lyke, wherein he did exercise and shew hymselfe.

Soe for a Time he did continew those courtly Exercises, untill that the Marques of *Southampton* went into *Fraunce* with an Embassage, to treat of a Marriage betwixt King *Edward* and the *French* Kinges Daughter. Sir *John Perrott* did accompany hym in that Viage, in such Sorte as was fitt for his Calling, goeing with so honorable a Man, in soe honorable a Message. The Marquis being a Nobleman that delighted much in all Activities, and did keep always the most excellent

lent Men that could be found in most Kindes of Activities and Disportes; which the King of *Fraunce* understanding, and being willing to shew hym such Pleasure as was used in that Countrie, on a Time he brought the Marquis to hunt the wild Boare, and being in Chace, it fell out, that a Gentleman charging of the Boare with his chasing Staff, did not hitt right, and so the Boare was ready to run in upon hym. Sir *John Perrott* perceiving hym to be in Perill, came into his Rescue, and with a broad Sword, which he then wore, gave the Boare such a Blow, that he did well neare part the Head from the Shoulders. The King of *Fraunce*, who stoode in Sight of this, came presently unto hym, took hym about the Mydle, and imbracing him, called hym *Beaufoile*; whereat he supposed that the Kinge came to trie his Strength, and taking the Kinge also about the Midel, lifted hym up somewhat high from the Ground: With which the Kinge was nothing displeased, but proffered hym a good Pension to serve hym. Sir *John Perrott* (having the *French* Tounge) answered

Sir John Perrott, Kt. 31

answered, That he did humbly thanck his Majestie for his large and bountifull Prof-fer, but he was a Gentleman that had Meanes of his owne to mayntayne hym- selfe, and if that he wanted ought, he knew that he served a gracious and a royall Prince, who would not see him want, and to whom he had only vowed his Service duringe Life.

SHORTLY, after *Sir John Perrot* re- turned from *France*, and came to the Court of *England*, where he lived at great Charge, and at soe high a Rate, as he grew into great Debt, and ranne so farre into Arrearages, that he began to mortgage some of his Lands, and yet did owe some seven or eight Thowland Pounds, being like to *Alexander the Great* in this, who agaynst his Expedition into *Persia* did put most Part of his Pos- sessions (belonging to the Crowne of *Macedon*) in Pawne. And being asked by *Perdica*, his chiefe Commander, what he left behynd hym, answered, *Hope*. So this Knight spending his Patrimony (as many of his Yeres and Calling do
now-

now-a-dayes, wastfully, and above their Habillitie) had lefte but a bare Hope to recover his Estate. Yet he at Length did begin to bethink hymself, and to look back into his decaying Fortune, and soe grew much agrieved at his owne Prodigality. Infomuch that on a Time he walked out of the Court, into a Place where commonly the Kinge did use to come about that Howre; and there he began (either as knowing that the Kinge would come that Way, or else by Chaunce,) to complayne as it were agaynst hymself, unto hymself: How unfortunate and unwise he was, soe to consume his Livinge, having wasted a great Part of that in few Yeares, which his Auncestors had gotten and enjoyed for many Yeres? And must I (quoth he) be the Man that shall overthrow my Howse, which hath continued soe longe? It had byn better I had never byn born. And what shall I doe (sayd he) to recover my Estate? So entered as it were into a Disputation with hymself, whether he were best to follow the Court, or to leave the Court and fol-

follow the Warres; for he feared that should he continew at Court, the King being yonge, and under Government, if upon his good Deserts the King should be pleased to graunt him any Thing in Recompence of his Service, yet his Governors, as the Lord-Protector, and the Privy-Counsell, might gaynsay it, and soe he should rather runne into farther Arrearages, than recover his decayed Fortunes; but if he did retier hymselfe into the Contrie, where he might live at lesse Charge, or betake hymselfe unto the Warres, where he might get hymselfe some Place of Commaund, it might be a Meanes to save his Revenewes, and to pay his Debtes.

As he was thus sadly debating the Matter unto hymselfe, the Kinge came behynd hym, and overheard most of that which he sayd, who at length stepped before him, and asked him, How now *Perrott* (quoth the Kinge) what is the Matter that you make this great Moane? To whom *Sir John Perrott* answered, And it lyke your Majestie, I did not thinck that your

D

High-

Highness had byn there: Yes, sayd the King, we heard you well inough: And have you spent your Livinge in our Service, and is the King so yonge, and under Government, that he cannot give you any Thinge in Recompence of your Service? Spie out sumwhat, and you shall see whether the Kinge hath not Power to bestow it on you. Than he most humbly thanked his Majestie, and shortly after founde out a Concealment, which as soone as he fought, the King bestowed it on hym, wherewith he paid the most part of his Debtes; and so always after he became a better Husband.

THIS Storie Sir *John Perrott* would sometimes recounte unto his Friends, acknowledging it a greate Blessinge of God, that had given him Grace in Time to look into his decaying Estate, and such Means to recover the same by the Healpe and Bountie of so merciful and rare a yonge Prince as this noble Kinge *Edward* was, the like of whom, for Learninge, Witt, and Princely Pietie, hath seldom byn seene in soe yonge Yeres. This
Ex-

Sir John Perrott, Kt. 35

Example also of *Sir John Perrott's* Prodigality and Recovery may serve for the yonge Men of this Age, and of Time to come, to teach them (with the Prodigall Sonne spoken of in the Gospell, and with this Knight, whose Life is here discribed) to return Home in Time, and with the Eie of Consideration to look into theyr Estates before all be spent, least that Sentence be sayd of them, as *Cato* sayd of one *Albidius*, that he did *proterviam facere*; which was an Adage, alluding to the Fashion of the Sacrifices, that whatsoever remayned should be burnt. And so in this foolish Oblation of Prodigalitie, and wastfull mispending, without Providence or Foresight, whatsoever the Belly consumeth not, they sett upon theyr Backs, whereby all is spent and consumed.

AFTER the Death of this towardlie and noble young Prince, King *Edward*, Queene *Mary* his Sister cominge to the Crown, *Sir John Perrott* continewed likewise at the Court, and was well accepted of amongst the best and greatest Nobilitie.

The Queene also did favour hym very well, and would say, That she did lyke exceeding well of him, and had a Hope he would prove a worthy Subject, but that (as his Words were) he did smell of the Smoake, meaninge thereby his Religion, for which he was called in Question by meanes of one — *Gaderne*, the Queenes Servant, and his Contrieman, who accused Sir *John Perrott*, That he kept certain Protestants, then called Hereticks, at his Howse in *Wales*, as one Mr. *Alexander Nowell*, who was afterwards Dean of *Litchfield*. Mr. — *Perrott* his Uncle (who had byn Reader to Kinge *Edward* in the *Greek* Tongue) and one Mr. *Banister*, with others, upon which Accusation he did not denie his own Religion, but was committed to the Fleete, yet being well frended, and the Queene favoring hym well, he was allowed to have his learned Counsell to come unto hym; and namely, one Mr. *Nowell*, Brother to the fore-named Dean, and soe by such Meanes as he made unto the Queene, he was released. Within a while he went to *St. Quintin*, where he had a Commaund under

Sir John Perrott, Kt. 37

der the noble Erle of *Pembrock*, who did speciall Love and Favor to him so farre that there was never any Unkyndness betwixt them but once, which happened in this Sorte. Queene *Mary* did once give speciall Charge unto the Erle of *Pembrock* to see that no Hereticks (meaning Protestants) should remayne in *Wales*. When the Erle had receved this Command, coming Home to his Lodging, where *Sir John Perrott* lay with his Sonne, *Sir Edward Herbert*, the Erle acquaynted hym what the Queen had given him in Charge, and told him, that inasmuch as the Queen had laid this generall Burden on his Back, I must (sayd he) Cossen *Perrott* ease my selfe, and lay part of my Burden on you for those Partes as the three Shiers whereabouts you dwell and have Living. I know there is noe Man can doe more than your selfe, and therefor that Charge which the Queene hath given me for *Wales* in generall, the same I must give you in particular for that Syrcuite. To which *Sir John Perrott* answered, Good my Lord (sayd he) I hope you know you may Command my Life and my Livinge, yet lay not that Bur-

D 3

den

den on me, but leave me to enjoy my Conscience, and I will not willingly meddle with other Mens Consciences. To whom the Erle replied sumwhat angrily, What, Sir *John Perrott*, will you be an Heretick with the reste? Not so my Lord, sayd he, for I hope my Religion is as sound as yours or any Man's else; and so with some other cholericke Speeches that Conference ended.

IN the Morning Sir *John Perrott* arose very early, and went abroad about his private Business, and returned back agayn by that Time the Erle was making hym readie (thinking that all Unkyndness had been past) but the Erle, as soon as he espied hym, asked, What! Sir *John Perrott*, Who sent for you? He answered, Why, my Lord, I did not think you would have ask'd me that Question; and if I had imagined soemuch, you should have sent for me twise before I would have come once, and shall doe soe before I come hither agayn. As he was turning about to goe out of Doores, the Erle called upon hym to stay, for he would
speake

Sir John Perrott, Kt. 39

speake with hym; and so they coming somewhat neere, fell into sharpe Words, and from fowle Wordes to fowle Play, that if they had not byn parted, much Hurt might have byn done. And soe Sir *John Perrot* was fayne to depart, not being able to make his Party good in that Place.

THIS was not so privatly done, or so secretly kept, but that it was published, and Newes thereof came speedily to the Court, That the Earl of *Pembrock* and Sir *John Perrott* were fallen out; and the Cause thereof was known to be for matters of Religion; which beinge brought unto the Queen's Eares (as Princes shall be sometimes inform'd of meaner Matters than this) she grew greatly displeased therewith; insomuch, that Sir *John Perrot*, having at that Time a Suite unto the Queen, for the Castle and Lordship of *Carew* (and a Promise thereof being made unto hym) when he came next unto the Queen to renew his Suite, the Queene would scarce look on hym, much less give hym any good Answer; which he percevinge, determynd not to be sett

from his Suite with austere Lookes, and so pressed so neere to the Queene, that he fell upon some Part of her Trayne, and besought her Majestie, to remember hir Princely Promise made unto hym for *Carew*, wherewith she seemed highly offended, and in angry sorte ask'd, What! *Perritt*, sayd she, Will you offer Violence to our Person? Then he besought her of Pardon for his Boldness; but she departed with much Indignation. At that Time, there was in *London* one *Sir Thomas Jones*, a Knight of good Judgement and Wisdom (who had married *Sir John Perrott's* Mother) he hearing what had happen'd, advised *Sir John Perrott* to reconcyle hymselfe unto the Erle of *Pembrock*, and to make hym a Meanes to pacifie the Queene, telling hym there was noe other way to recover hir Favor, and to avoyd present Perill. *Sir John Perrott* answered, that sithence the Erle had offer'd hym such Unkindness, he could not seeke his Favour, although it cost hym his Life. But within short Time, *Sir John Perrott* found such Friends about the Queene, that she was content to remitte what was past, in Hope
he

he would be reformed in Religion, and to referre his Suite unto the Lords of her Privy Counsell. When he came before the Lords of the Counsell to know their Pleasures, whether it were convenient that he should have *Carew*, according to the Queenes Promise, there was amongst them one who bare greate Sway, the Buyshop of *Winchester*: He had understanding of *Sir John Perrotts* Disposition in Religion, and of the Difference that had byn betwixt the Erle of *Pembroock* and hym; therefore he began vere sharply to censure hym, and to tell hym; *Sir John Perrott*, sayd the Buyshop, Do you come to seek Suites of the Queene? I tell you, except you alter your Hereticall Religion, it were more fitt that the Queene should bestow Fagotts, than any Livinge on you; and so he pass'd on with a very severe Sentence against hym. But when it came to the Erle of *Pembroock* to deliver his Opinion, he spoke thus (as *Sir John Perrott* hymself hath related it) My Lords (quoth the Erle) I must tell you my Opinion of this Man, and of this Matter, for the Man, I thincke he would at this Time, if he could,

could, eat my Herte with Salte ; but yet, notwithstanding his Stomacke towards me, I will give hym his dew, I hold hym to be a Man of good Worth, and one who hath deserved of hir Majesty in hir Service, as good a Matter as this which he seaketh, and will noe doubt deserve better, if he reforme his Religion ; therfor since the Queene has past her Gracious Promise, I see noe Reason but he should have that which he seaketh. When they heard the Erle of *Pembrock* speak soe favorably for hym, who they thought would have been most vehement agaynst hym ; then all the rest of the Counsell were content that he should have his Suite, and soe made favorable Report thereof unto her Majestie, who shortly after graunted hym the same. And he did ever after (as he had Cause) acknowledge hymself much beholding unto the Erle of *Pembrock*, who in this, as in all things else, shewed hymself most honorable. For what better Testimony could be given of a worthy heroicall Mynd, then not only to forgett an Unkindness, but to shew hymself most kynd, when he had both Cause and

Meanes

Sir John Perrott, *Kt.* 43

Meanes to be revenged ; farre differing from the Disposition of divers Noblemen now a Dayes, who would be glad to finde such an Opportunitie (as was then offered unto this Noble Erle) to work any of their Adversaries Overthrow, who should so deeply offend them. But this Nobleman bare a more heroicall Spirite, knowing that to be trew which the Poet testifieth.

—— *Quippe minuti
Semper & infirmi est animi exiguiq; voluptas
Ultio, continuo sic collige, quod vindicta
Nemo magis gaudet quam femina.*

He saith, that Desier of Revenge is a Signe of a meane, weak, and an abject Mynd ; for that none do rejoyce in Revenge more than Women: And soe on the other Side, we see many Times that forgetting and forgeving of Injuries (especially, where there is Power to revenge) doth gayne more good Will, than the giving of greate Rewards. Which is manifest in this Nobleman's worthy Cariage, who was truly valiant and magnanimous ; but not soe revengefull as those, whom Fear
and

44 *The LIFE of*

and Malice doth move to worke other
Mens Overthrow.

AND this Example is here sett downe,
as well to give this Noble Personage his
due Prayse, as to leave it for a Patterne of
Imitation unto others. After this Passage,
Sir John Perrott did always honor the Erle
of *Pembrock*, as there was great Cause he
should, and the Erle did lykewise extra-
ordinarily respect hym, as many others
did in regard of his Personage, Witte,
Valour, and Expertnes in Armes, which
he did much exercise, although the Parti-
culars be not here sett down.

WHEN Queen *Mary* had run out the
Race of Mortality, her Sister, our Sove-
reigne of happie Memory now levinge,
succeeding her, most Men (as the manner
of the World is) came to present their
Service to the new Princeesse; for it is true,
that more do reverence the Sunne rysinge
then the Sun declyninge; amongst whom
Sir John Perrott, not soe much to follow a
Multitude, or to hunt after Favor, as to
offer the Oblation of that Zeale, which he
had

had formerly professed unto hir in the time of Affliction, came now as rejoycing at the times Felicitie and the Princes Prosperitie, unto Queen *Elizabeth's* Court before hir Coronation, who did gratioously accept of his Service, so that by the Princes Favor, his own Worthiness, and the Comliness of his Personage, he was appoynted for one of the fower (as the Chronickles make mention) to carry the Canopy of Estate over the Queene at hir Coronation. From which time he lived conformable to the Courses prescrib'd by the Queene, hir Counsell, and Lawes; and shewed hymselfe forwards in all Services for his Prince and Countrie. But before we come to describe his managinge of weightier Affayers; for hitherto youthfull Delightes, Court Intertaynments, and sometimes the Cariage of private Quarrells with Noblemen and others had possessed hym, and the Expence of a great part of his Time; therefore in the closinge up of his youthfull Conditions, we shall declare one Pageant, which he played in the Presence of the Queen, and it was thus. There was in the first Year of Queen *Elizabeth's* Reign an Embassador

bassador from *Francis* Ild Kinge of *Fraunce*, as whose being in *England* the King his Master was slayn at Tylte, by the rising up of his Beaver, and the running of a Launce thorow the same into the Kinge's Head ; whereof Queen *Elizabeth* had speedy Advertisement by hir Leidger in *Fraunce*, and she proposinge either to comfort the Leidger for the Death of the Kinge his Master ; or else to conceal the same from him as long as she might, whereof he then seemed ignorant, and made no outward Show of Sorow ; Hir Majestie then tooke the late slayne *French* Kinge's Leidger with hir into the Parke at *Grenwich*, where Tentes were set up, and a Banquet provided. As she passed through the Parke Gate, a Page presented a Speech unto hir, signifyinge that there were certayne Knights come from a farre Contrie, whoe had dedicated theyr Services unto theyr severall Mistresses, being Ladies for Beautie, Virtue, and other Excellencies (as they deemed) incomparable ; and, therefore, they had vowed to advance theyr Fame thorow the World, and to adventure Combate with such that should be

be soe hardie as to affirm, that there were any Ladies so excellent as the Saints which they served. And hearing greate Fame of a Lady which kept hir Court thereabouts, both for hir own Excellencie for the Worthines of many renowned Knights which she kept, they were come thither to trie whether any of her Knights would incounter them for the Defence of their Mistresses Honor. When this Speech was ended, the Queene told the Page, " Sir Dwarfe, you give me very shorte " Warninge, but I hope your Knightes " shall be answered : " And then looking about, she asked the Lord Chamberlayne, Shall we be out-bragged by a Dwarfe ? No, and it lyke your Majestie, answered he, Let but a Trumpett be sounded, and it shall be seene that you keepe Men at Armes inough to answer any proud Challenges. Then was the Trumpett sounded, and ymmediately there yssued out of the East Lane at *Greenwich* divers Pentioners gallantly armed, and mounted. The Challengers were the Erle of *Ormond*, the Lord *North*, and Sir *John Perrott*; presently upon their coming forth, the Challengers

lengers prepar'd themselves to run certayne Courses in the Fielde agaynste all Commers; amongst the rest of the Defendants, there was one Mr. *Cornwallys*, a tall Gentleman and a good Man at Armes, to whose turne it fell at length to runne agaynste Sir *John Perrott*. As they both incountered, Sir *John Perrott* (thorough the Unstedines of his Horse, and the Uncertayntie of Courses in the Field) chanced to run Mr. *Cornwallys* thorow the Hose scarringe his Thigh, and sumwhat hurting his Horse; wherewith he being offended, and Sir *John Perrott* discontented, as they were both cholericke, they fell into a Challenge to run with sharpe Launces without Armour in the Presence of the Queene, which her Majestie hearing of, would not suffer it; but with good Persuasions pacified them: So they were reconciled, and the Combat ended after certayne Courses performed on both Sydes by the Challengers and Defendants.

AND, after the finishing of these Field Exercises, hir Majesty did invite the *French* Leidger to the Banquett provided in a Pavilion

vilion in the Parke ; but he belyke having receved then Advertisement of the King, his Majesties Death, prayed Pardon of her Majestie for refusinge to be Partaker of any pleasant Banquett at that Time, when all Shewes and Intertaynmentes sounded nothing but Sorow into his Eares and Senses, for the Death of his Master and Soverayne the Kinge of *Fraunce*. Afterwards *Sir John Perrott* did continew by interchangable Courses, sometimes at the Court, sometimes in the Contrie, and at all Times in the Service of his Prince, wherein he was very forward, whether Abroad or at Home, untill the Year 1572: at which Time it pleased the Prince and State to imploy him in Foreyne Affayers, and to make hym the first Lord President of *Monster* in *Ierland*, being then a Province much disordered and desolate, wasted by Means of the Erle of *Desmond's* Warres and Rebellion, and thorow the continual Spoyles, Burnings and Destroying of the Queenes good Subjects by the Rebels there ; and especially by the merciles, bloody Deedes of *James Fitz-Moris*, the Erles Seneshall or Lifetenant, and the

E

chief

chief Actor in all those crewel Devastations. He was a Man very valiant, politicke and learned as any Rebelle hath byn of that Nation for many Yeres.

AGAINST hym, with the rest of his Accomplices, was Sir *John Perrott* sent to be President of *Monster*, and he landed at *Waterford* the first of *March* 1572, being *St. David's-Day*. And within three Dayes of his landing, the Rebelle *James Fitz-Moris* burned the Town of *Kyllmalog*, hanged the Sovereigne of that Town, and others of the Townsmen (as many as he could take) at the high Crosse in the Market-Place, and caried all the Plate and Wealth of the Towne with hym; with which Intertaynment Sir *John Perrott*, the new President, was much discontented, and therefore hastened unto *Dublyn*, to take his Oath of the Lord Deputie, Sir *Henry Sidney*, with Porpose to present the Rebells with sharpe and speedy Warre, at his Return from *Dublyn* to *Coorke*, which was about the 10th of *April* following. He firste gathered and lodged his own Companies there, havinge with hym two Companies

Companies of Foote, under the Command of Captayne *Bowler*, and Captayne *Furse*, besyds 200 *Irish* Soldiers of *Kerne* and *Galleglasses*; also he had with him his owne Troupe of Horse, which were of the Queenes Intertaynment, and of his owne Servants 100 Horse, and Captayne *Abslow* commanded under hym as many. With these he went to *Kyllmalog*, the late wasted Towne, where he lodged hymselfe in a Howse half burned, and about a Seveneth, and he made a Proclamation, That as many of the Townesmen as fled, and were livinge after the said Slaughter, should returne Home; which they did perform accordingly, and began to buyld their Gates, to repayre the Towne-Walles, and to re-edifie their Howses as well as they might in so short a Time after so greate a Spoyle.

BEFORE the Lord President's Departure from *Kyllmalog*, one Night the Crie of the Countrie was up, That the Rebels had beset the Lord *Roch* his Castell, burnt his Baurne, slayne some of his People, and taken away a great many of his Cattell.

tell. Which Alarom being given, the Lord President suddaynly aroase, armed hymselfe, took with hym his own Troupe of Horfe, and Captayne *Abslow*'s, leaving the Foot-Bands behynd to guard the Towne, and soe he pursued the Rebells, being in Number 200, whom he over-tooke at a Place called *Knocklonga*, within three Myles of *Arlange* Wood; there the Rebells fell to the Bogges, as their best Fastnes, and left theyr Preie. The Lord President caused his Men to light from theyr Horfes, to ryppe off their Bootes, and to leppe into the Bogges, taking with them theyr Petronels and Light-Horsemens Staves insteede of Pykes, with which they charged the Enemie in the Bogges, overthrew them, and cut off fifty of their Heads, which they carried Home with them unto *Kyllmalog*, and put the Heads round about the Crosse, which were knowen by the Townesmen that the President sent for from *Lymbricke*, who had lately lost theyr Goods, and then he restored unto the Lord *Rech* all his Cattell.

T H E N

THE N the Lord President, after he had comforted and strengthned the Townsmen of *Kyllmalog*, he departed towards *Lymbricke*, and on the Way came to a Castell of *Fybott Burk*, who had byn in Action with *James Fitz-Moris*, but afterward they slew one another; there the President demaunded the Keyes of the Castell, and that he might enter. Which they not only denied, but shutt the President's People out of the Castell, they having about forty Soldiers in it. The President thereupon caused the Castell to be undermined, which was within three Hours shaken on the one Side, that Part of the Wall fell to the Ground, which slew some of the Rebells within: Whereupon the Wife of *Fybott Burk* did yeild hir self, with her Sonne, and the Castell, into the Hands of the President, who leste there thirty *Englishmen* to guard the Castell, and he departed to *Lymbrick*, to receive the Lords that came unto hym, as the Earl of *Tomond*, *O'Hones*, *Desmond*, and others, as also to settle that Part of the Contrie.

FROM *Lymbrick* the Lord President went to *Cashill*, and on the Way there was a Castell held by the Rebels, which he caused to be set on Fier, by shooting of Fier up into the Topp, which was covered with Thach, he commaunded his Men to light from theyr Horses to do the Execution, who leste their Horses with their Footeboys hard by to feed; but the Noyse of the Castell at the Fall thereof, and the Sight of the Fier, did so fright the Horses, that they broke loose from the Boys which helde them, and ranne into the Woods, where they were taken and caried away by the Rebels which lay in the Woods; but shortly after the President recovered most of his Horses agayne. When he came to *Cashill*, there he hanged seven of the Grasy Marchants, being such as bring Bread and Aquavita, and other Provisions unto the Rebels; the Soverayne of the Towne hardly escaped that Punishment. From *Cashill* the Lord President went to *Fether* and *Clomell*, and to Sir *Edward Butler's* Contrie, where he took his chiefe Castell, it being yielded, and also Pledges for his Fidelitie;

Fidelitie; also he took in other Holds, and so went up to *Carick*, the Erle of *Ormond's* Howse, whom he appoynted (after some abode there) to meet hym at *Cork*.

WHEN the President came to *Corke*, [*ultimo Maii*] he assembled there the chief Lords of the Province, which came unto hym, as the Erle of *Ormond*, *Clyncarty* and *Tomond*; the Lord *Bury*, the Lord *Roch*, the Lord *Corsey*, *Mackcarty*, *Reuch*, *Gormond Mack-Teage*, and almost all the Lords, save such as were out in Rebellion; he appoynted them to gather theyr Forces, and to meet him within a Moneth after, meaning to follow the Rebels wheresoever they went, and soe they did.

FOR first the Lord President drew all his Forces into the *white Knight's* Contrie, takinge two of his Castells, burnt many of his Howses, and drave hym into the Woods. From thence he march'd with his Power unto *Arlaugh* Woods, being the Rebels chiefe Place of Strength, and following them there for a while, he

returned unto *Corke* to refresh his Men, and so went into *Mac Swine's* Contrie; there he slew many of the Rebels, and hanged as many as he might take, whom the Marshiall executed always as he went along; so that they took a great Prie, spoyled all the Enimies Contrie, and with continual Travell wore out all their Provision, having noe Corn in the Contrie left to make them Bread, which the President hymselfe wanted for divers Dayes; their chief Sustenance being the Mylke of those Kine which they had taken, and so they brought 2500 Kine with them to *Cork*, after two Months Travell, pursuing the Rebels from Place to Place.

JAMES Fitz-Moris finding his Forces weakened, and that beinge soe followed without Intermission, he could not continue longe, except he were supplied with some Forayne Ayde, did therefore draw over into *Monster*, 500 *Scottish*, *Irish*, or *Redshanks*, out of the Islands, with whom he thought hymselfe able to make Resistance against the President's Power, having 1000 Followers of his owne. The President

fidest hearing of his Power, did lykewise prepare to incounter with hym, and sent for the Lords of that Contrie, as the Lord *Rock*, the Lord *Bury*, Sir *Gormond Mack-Teag*, and others, with whom he went agaynst the Rebels, and met them in the Woods, within the County of *Limbrick*, where they had as it were intrenched themselves upon the Skyrte of a Wood; the Lord President viewing the Campe, sent them Word, That he was come to give them Battayle, and would stay for them in the Playne, if they would come forth to fight with hym; but they being not willing soe to doe, answered, That there they stayed for hym, and from thence they would not goe. Which he perceving, prepared his People to Battayle, and charge them. Soe he placed the *Irish* Lords, and others of the better Sort, within the Body of the mayne Battayle, telling them, That he was not willinge to expose them to the uttermost Danger, which he did out of this Politicke Consideration, knowing that thereby the Lords (if any of them were ill mynded or fearfull) should be kept in from running away, and that

58 *The LIFE of*

that theyr Followers would stick to it the better, seeing theyr Lords ingaged. Which the President had the more Reason to doe, because of Eleven Hundred then in his Company, three Partes at the least were *Irish*: So with this good Order and Resolution he set on the Rebells, who were about 1500 strong, and brake them, killing eleven Score of the Rebells and their Ayders; whereupon they made their Retrayte towards the Northe, and so *James Fitz-Moris* grew weake agayne.

FROM thenceforwards the President followed his good Fortunes and his Foes, with such Earnestness, that seldom would they come to fight with hym, except it were light Skyrmezes, and that upon greate Advantage. Which he percevinge, pursued them Night and Day in Person, even in the Winter, and lay out many Nights in the Field both in Froste and Snow, enduring such Hardnes, that I have heard two of his Followers, yet living, report that of hym, as were they not Men of good Credit, it would hardly be beleved, the one of them being present when following

lowing of *Kerne* thorow the Woods, where they could not ride. The Lord President hymself took such Paynes in marching, that with the Earnestnes of pursuing, and the Deepnes of the foule Ways in the midst of Winter, he lost one of his Shoes, and so went on a pretty Way without his Shoe, or without feelinge the Losse of it, till at length it beganne to payne him so much, that he rested on this Gentleman's Shoulder, and told hym there was somewhat which greved his Foote, so lifting up his Legge, the Gentleman told hym, My Lord, you have lost your Shoe. Tis noe matter, quoth he, as long as the Leggs laste we will find Shoes, and soe calling for another Payer, he marched on still. At another Time, being abroad in Service, they incamped neere a Wood, where the President lay in his Tent, having for his *Guide* some of his Servants, and certayne *Gallyglasses*. The *Galliglasses* had gotten a Hogge, which they roasted after their Manner by a great Fier neere the President, and when they had halfe roasted it (with halfe the Hayer about it) they began to make Partition therof, and

and one of them in great Kindness, did reach a Peece to one of the President's Servants, being a Gentleman of good Sorte (and a Justice of the Peace in his Contrie, yet livinge) the President perceivinge it, told him, *James* (quoth he) this was good Meate in such a Place, meaninge his Dwelling. To whom the Gentleman answered, And it please you, it is good Meat here amongst these Men; but if it were at Home, I would scarce give it to my Doggs. This and the lyke Paynes, Danger and Travell, did the Lord President putt hymselfe and his People unto for a long Time, belyke following the Counsell of the Poet, which sayth,

*Perfer & obdura, dolor hic tibi proderit olim;
Sæpe tulit fessis succus amarus opem.*

And by this Meanes did the Lord President so infeeble *James Fitz-Moris*, with all his Adherents, that they durst not show themselves in open hostile Manner, as they were wont to do; but now they began to betake themselves to Slightes, and to play least in Sight, and to seeke all Meanes of protracting

protracting the Lord President's invading them. As for Example, *James Fitz-Moris* (who in all these Feates was his Craftes-master) knowing, that the Lord President did desier nothing more than the finishing of those Warres, and the subduinge of those Rebells, made shew that he also was willing to finish the same with Combate or single Fight, and did send the Lord President Word thereof, as believing that the President's longinge for a speedie Yssue, and his Expectation thereof would keepe hym for a Time from farther Action, and proceeding agaynst the Rebells; and soe indeede it tooke the same Effect, for *James Fitz-Moris* did first offer to fight with fiftie of his Horsemen, agaynst the Lord President, and fiftie of his, which the Lord President willingly accepted, and made Choyse of soe many, whereof most were his owne Servants; but when the Time of Performance came, *James Fitz-Moris* made Excuse, and sent Word that he would willingly fight with the Lord President in single Combate, Hand to Hand. To which Message the Lord President sent Answer, That although

62 *The L I F E of*

though he knew there was a Difference betwixt theyr Persons and theyr Places, yet he would willingly accept his Challenge for the finishing of the Warres. Then the Time, Place, and Manner of his Combate was concluded on, the Place appoynted at *Amely*, an old Towne, six Miles from *Kyllmallock*. The Weapons that were assigned to fight withall, was by *James Fitz-Moris* appoyntment, Sword and Targett, and they should be both clad in *Irish* Trousses, which the President did provide of Scarlett, and was redie according to appoyntment, saying, “ That although he knew *James Fitz-Moris* to be his Inferior in all Respects, yet he would reckon it a Life well adventured, to be-reve such a Rebelle of his Life.

THITHER came the Lord President, and thither came most of the Nobilitie and Gentlemen of that Province, to see this Combatt performed. When the Time of Performance came, *James Fitz-Moris* came not, but sent a cunning and subtile Excuse, by one *Cono Roe Oharnan*, beinge an *Irish* Poet, saying, That he would
not

Sir John Perrott, Kt. 63

not fight with the Lord President at all, not soe much for feare of his Life, but because on his Life did depend the Safetie of all such as were of his Party. For said he, if I should kyll *Sir John Perrott*, the Queene of *England* can send another President into this Province, but if he do kyll me, there is none other to succeede me, or to command as I doe, therefore I will not willingly fight with hym, and so tell hym from me. When the Lord President herd this, he was much discontented, that he had suffered hymself to be thus abused, and that he had lost so much Time and Opportunitie, therefore he vowed, without Delay, to *hunt the Foxe out of his Hoole* (as he sayd). And besyds his owne Diligence, he did earnestly incorage and charge all the Noblemen of the Contrie to use their best Meanes for the subduing of that subtle and perilous Rebelle. Amongst the rest, he wrote unto the Erle of *Ormond*, whom he loved well, a most earnest and reprehensive Letter, as it followeth:

My

My very good Lord,

“ **H**A VINGE soe convenient a Mes-
“ finger, I may not but trouble
“ your Lordship with these few Lines ;
“ wherein I must impart unto you, that
“ six Days past having Conference with
“ some one your good Frende, about
“ Causes of *Ierland*, among other Speeches
“ your Lordshipes Service against the Erle
“ of *Desmond* was comuned of, wherein, as
“ you were greatly commended for your
“ honorable Service agaynst hym at the
“ first entery into the same ; so there pas-
“ sed some Speeches, that now of late
“ you did not so earnestly prosecute the
“ Rebels as it was thought you might
“ have done, considering the Number of
“ *Englishmen* that remayne now in *Ierland*,
“ your own Forces, and the Weaknes of
“ the Rebels. And, my Lord, as I have
“ ever loved and honored you, so it can-
“ not but grieve me, if any Way you
“ should be imputed slack, or to use any
“ Kind of Policie in so good a Cause.
“ And if your Lordship should not doe
“ all your Endeavor, and take the Ad-
“ vantage,

“ vantage, while you have convenient
“ Time agaynst your auncient Enimies;
“ perhapes, hereafter (when they shall
“ grow stronge) you will repent the
“ same; You are among the generall here,
“ accounted to be most ablest and trewe-
“ est unto her Majestie; wherefore, (ex-
“ cept the want of Victualls be your Lott),
“ doe presently some notable Service to
“ the increasinge of your Honor, and to
“ your continual Fame. Otherwise I shall
“ be most sorie, considering your Lord-
“ ship knoweth, I well understand in how
“ short Time, and with how small Diffi-
“ culty you may drive the Erle and his
“ either out of Mounster, or have theyr
“ Heades; for deviding your Bands into
“ fower Partes, and causing the Lordes to
“ keepe theyr Countries, you may drive
“ him out of Arloe, Domfrynne, Conilogh,
“ Kylbogy and Glanfleske. This done, he
“ cannot stand in the Playne tenne Days
“ before you, you having more Force of
“ Horsemen than he hath; And although
“ I know you know this very well, yet I
“ will not leave to remember you, as
“ bound thereto; and so wishing to your

F

“ Lordshipp

66 *The LIFE of*

“ Lordshipp as to my self, I committ
“ you to God.

Subscribed, *Your Lordships, whom you
may assuredly command,*

JOHN PERROTT.

By this Letter it appereth how carefull
the Lord President was to have the Re-
bells thorowly prosecuted, and how jea-
lous he was of the Erle of *Ormond*'s Ho-
nor and Reputation, whom tho' he loved
most deerely (for they had been sworne
Brothers ever synce the Coronation of
Kinge *Edward*) yet the Lord President
preferred the Love to his Countrie, and
the Service of his Prince, before any par-
ticular Love to any Person, tho' never so
noble or honorable, which made hym
write so playnly and boldely as few would
have done the Lyke, unto the Erle of *Or-
mond*, who was in high Estimation in the
Contrie, and was in greate Favor with his
Prince. For he might well conceive that it
would much offend the Erle to be touched
with any Suspicion in such Sorte, he hav-
ing

ing ever carried hymself so honorably in the Eies of the World, and in the Opinion of the *English* State, that none of his Nation had that general good Estimation. And therefore, whether the want of Victuells, or some other special Impediment, did stay the Erle from that speedie and effectuall prosecuting of the Rebells, as the President did then expect, I may not undertake to determyne: Only this we may with Reason conclude, That the Lord President seemed too playne in this Exhortation, as his Manner was in all other his Dealings, which in the End was the Cause of his Confusion. Now as the President was earnest to put forwards others in the Queenes Service, to suppress these Rebells and their Confederates: So was he nothing backwards hymself to see the same executed in his owne Person, which he did desire to be assisted by others; for presently he sought after, and at the length found out the Ringleader of the Rebells, *James Fitz-Moris*, whom he overtooke not farre from a Bridge, but not in that Sort as he sought; for it fell out thus, that *James Fitz-Mo-*

68 *The LIFE of*

ris, who now drew his Breath by Shiftes and Slightes, suffered a false Spie to come unto the Lord President, with Protestation and Oathes, That he knew where *James Fitz-Moris* was lodged, with less then xxx Persons in his Company, and that if the President would come with Expedition, he might be suer to take the Rebell in that Manner this Night, without Danger; and for Confirmation whereof he offer'd not Words aloane, but the Adventure of his Life to goe with them; and if it were not soe, let hym be the first Man that should die for it. With which desperate Pawne of Life (the President, with others who were neereest him, were perswaded to take that Opportunity for the apprehending of soe notorious a Rebell. This being after Supper, the President caused some xxx of his People to arme themselves, and he with them took Horse, not staying for any more Company, least they should loose so good an Opportunitie as they then hoped for; some fower others followed after them as soon as they could make redie: As they thus posted on to the Place where it was sayd that

that this Traytor should be so slenderly guarded, they came up to the Place towards the Dawninge of the Day, where *James Fitz-Moris* lay in Ambush under a Hill, with fower or five Hundred Foot, and above some Fourscore Horſe, whom the Prefident nor his People could not eſpie, (it beinge but the Dawninge of the Day, and they lying under the Covert of a Hyll) untill two or three of his Horſemen were within the Reach of the Rebels, who charged them; and there the Prefident's Secretary, called *Trewobrigg*, being one of the foremoſt, was ſlayne, and about a Hundred Pounds of his Maſter's Money, which he caried with hym, was taken from hym. The Prefident perceiving how he was intrapped, when others would have retired, and would have hym returne, ſaying it was his beſt Safetie, conſidering his ſmall Number, and the Multitude of the Rebels; he answered, That he would not do ſoe, for he had rather die fighting than runninge away; and therefore he bid them to charge Home with hym, and he was one of the foremoſt hymſelf (as they ſay who were

there, and are yet livinge) so that he encountered with one of the Rebels, and run hym with his Launce thro' a Skirt of Male, wherewith he unhorsed his Enemy, and stood over hym, redie to strike hym agayne as he arose. In the meane Time, there came in another Horseman of the Rebels Side behynd hym, thincking to have run hym thorow behynd (having forced his Horse to lepe upon a Banke or Ledge to reach this Rebell, whom he unhorsed) the other behynd being redie to punch the President with his Staff overhand, as the Maner of the *Irish* Charge is; but one *George Greame*, a valiant Gentleman, now a Knight, and a Captain yet livinge in *Ierland*, came in to rescue the President, and run the Rebell thorow before he could give the President that deadly Blow which he purposed. With that they charged others afresh, and were furcharg'd themselves with Multitudes, havinge theyre Handes full; so that the President's Horse was almost spent, and yet he would not give over. But by the Report of some now livinge (who were present, and whose Estates and Condition

tion of Life deserve goode Creditt) The Lord President was left three Times that Morninge one of the last in the Fielde, still encouraging his Men to come up and charge anew, for he was once near taken, and hardly rescued, so that surely he had been slayn or taken, if an extraordinary Accident (or rather, as we may truly say, a Divine Appoyntment) had not preserved him. For at the last, one Captayne *Bowler*, with fower more that made themselves redie as soon as they might, came after. And they appering upon the Toppe of the Hyll, *James Fitz-Moris* supposed it had been Captain *Bowler*, with hys Company, and the rest of the *English* Forces that were coming with a Supplie. Whereupon *James Fitz-Moris*, ymediatly made his Soldiers to retire, so that the President was delivered from a very greate Danger, whereto he fell, by giving Credite to a wandring Spiall, which made him more circumspect, and less credulous of any such Reports or false Intelligence; and yet he ceased not to follow after the Rebels with his Forces, in such Sorte, that shortly after he overtooke

James Fitz-Moris, with his Companies of *Kerne*, near a Bridge, and not far from a Wood Syde, where the Rebelle finding himself so closely pursued, that he could hardly escape without some Slight, did present devise to send towards the President one, as it were a Herald, with a white Cloth on the Top of a Spear, in token of Parley; which being perceived, the President imagining that he would bring some Newes, stayed his Companies from marching forward, to know what Message this strange Herald brought with hym, who to delay Time offered certayn Conditions of Submission, but not such as the Lord President expected, or would accept of. In the mean Time, the subtle Rebelle, *James Fitz-Moris*, closely conveyed his *Kerne* over the Bridge into the Wood, and so escaped for that Time. Whereat the Lord President was wonderfully displeased; yet nevertheless, this Devise did but a very little protract Time, and exasperate the President with more Desier and Industrie to follow hym, and to finish the Warres, which were now almost at an Ende. For within small Time, the

the President givinge the Rebells no rest, or leaving them any Means of Mayntenance, did disperse the Power of *James Fitz-Moris*, and made hym glad to separate his small Numbers, and to hide his Head, without any Strength or Number of Men to accompany hym. So that he was forced to seek and sue for Pardon, offering to submit hymself to the Queene's Mercy. Which at length the Lord President did consent unto, and *James Fitz-Moris* came to *Killmallock*, where in the Church the Lord President caused hym to lie prostrate, taking the Poynt of the Lord President's Sword next to his Heart, in Token that he had received his Life at the Queene's Hands, by submitting hymself unto her Mercy. And soe he tooke a solemn Oath to be and continew a trew Subject unto the Queene and Crowne of *England*, whereby the Province of *Mounster* was much quieted, and maynteyned in as good Peace as any Part of *Ierland*; which the Lord President's owne Letters, written to the Erle of *Warwick*, and other his honorable Friends doth testifie; the Copies whereof are as followeth:

My

My very good Lord,

I Were much to be condemned, if (whatsoever Busines I had) I would leave your honorable Letters unanswered, thincking myself much beholding to you for the writing of such as I have received, assuring you, that I have sent unto you two severall Letters before this Time, which if they were not trewly delivered, beskrew the Hertes of the Carriers. Your Lordshipp shall never have Occasion to thincke Unkindnes in me, but that I will be as redie to honor you, as any who wisheth you best, after Troble, Toyling, some Hazard, running up and down after Kernes (with as ill Legges as your Lrdshipp hath.) And being let with most of the fine Heades of this Land (as well English as Irish) to bring that to pass which I was sent hither for, I have now, I thancke God, in the Eand, compassed that, in bringing her Majesties Subiectes here to Obedience, as I trust her Highnes may stand satisfied therewith; for I know not any Kerne abroad at this present Hower, neither neede any Man feare to Travell thorow any Part of this Province without

Sir John Perrott, Kt. 75

without Weapon or Assurance. The idell
Sort fall as fast unto the Plow, as they were
wont to runne unto Mischief. I can say noe
more, but whatsoever it shall please the
Queene's Majestie to command here, it shall
be done. I understand that the Erle of Es-
sex, with a great Rout, intendeth the Con-
quest of the North, for her Majesties Ser-
vice, I wish hym good Successe; but for
hymself, I care not what cometh thereof, for
he and his Frendes have sought as much to
discredit me in my Absence, as in them lay.
But I thank the Queene's Majestie they were
not beleved, neither was there any Cause.
If they lie on me, chide for your poor Bro-
ther, &c. From Corke, this xiiiith of
July, 1573.

Subscribed,

Your Lordship's poore Brother,

and assured to command,

JOHN PERROTT.

THIS

THIS Letter sheweth unto what Subjection and Tranquilitie the Lord President had reduced that Province, and how he was hindred by his Enemies (altho' they were the Queene's Subjectes) to do her Majestie Service. Also it is manifest hereby, what Complaynts were made in *England* against hym in his Absence, for there did never want those which would be ready to sett forwards, and to further his Adversarys in artickling and petitioning against hym to the Queene and Counsell, whereof he complayn'd to this honourable Erle that loved hym so deerely that he did always call hym *Brother*, and would be redie styll to answer for hym in his Absence. At that very Time, the Lord President wrote the lyke Letter unto the Erle of *Sussex*, somewhat of the same Subject, first acknowledging, That he had receved a Letter from the Erle of *Sussex*, who thereby seemed glad that the Lord President had purged hymself, touching that he was charged with, about a *Marfigllian* Shipp that came into *Mounster*.

AND

AND so lykewise the Erle wished that he might unburden hymself of the rest, for which the Lord President did thanck his Lordship, as one whom he knew did wish hym well for old Acquaintance, and told hym in these Termes: Truly, my Lord, there is noe Man that hath been more wronged than your Lordship, touching your *Irish* Service, whereby I think you may the better (untill Proffe be had) excuse any one that serveth here, who is ill reported of. He said also, That for his own Part, sithence almost xlv Years had passed hym, he were worse than madd, if either Pelfe should cause, or light Toy move hym to do that which should passe the Boundes of Reason or Honestie. And further, he telleth the Erle of *Suffex*, That your Lordship hath knowen me, I am sure, these xxvi Yeres at the least, during which Time you never knew me do any dishonest Deede; perhapps some willfullnes you may remember that I have committed, whereof your Lordship hath seen part your selfe. I ask of my Friends no more but one Thing,

Never

78 *The L I F E of*

Never to love me, if any ill Thinge can be layd to my Charge before or synce my coming into Ierland, can be proved true. Whatsoever I have done, I am able to answer the doeing therof, either by Commission or Reason. And touching the Lord President's Service, and the State of that Contrie, he informs the Erle of *Sussex* by that Letter, That he had staid in *Mounster* but only one Hundred *English* Foote-men, whom he ceased and placed in several Townes of that Province, in such Sort as theyr Aboad there was neither chargeable greatly unto hir Majesty nor hir Subjects, upon whom they were placed. Which whensoever there should be any neede of them, he could spare them, and would be able lend a Thowland Men when Occasion should requier (so as they might be victualed) and yet would reserve besyds, at the least, five or six Thowland able Men to serve the Queene's Majestie there. Wherein his Service was sufficiently shewed, into what Peace and good State he had brought that Province. And also it is no less manifest by this Declaration, and by the former Letter, how
much

much the Lord President was molested with the Complayntes and Calumniationes of his Adversaries; that it should seem he was as much trobled, and had in a Manner as much to do with answering the Articles and Objections of his private Adversaries, as to withstand the Assaults and Alarumes of the publick Enimies of State. For it is surer, that by his Service there he had procured more Enimies than by any other Meanes, such was his Severitie and playne Dealing with all Men, and especially with Offenders, without respect of Persons. And that may be seene by another Example, of an Accident which fell out in the Time of his Government there, which was thus: There was some Question made of certayne Liberties which the Erle of *Ormond* claimed to belong unto his Signiories; and one of the Priveleges so chalenged, was, That no Man should be brought to take his Triall out of those Liberties or Lordships, for any Offence committed within the Precinctes thereof, but that they should be only tried before the Erles Officers. Then it came soe to passe, that certayne Offences

ces were done within those Liberties, and the Offendors could not be found or brought forth: Therefore the Lord President sent unto the Erle's Officers, either to bring the Parties punishable before him, or else to send the Sheriffe of that Countie unto hym: Which they in some Sorte refused to doe, excusing theyr Refusal, by pleading the Erle's Patentt or Graunt of their alleadged Liberties and Privileges. But the President tooke it in ill Part, and wrote a sharpe Letter unto the Erle's Officers (as the Lord of *Donborne*, Sir *Edmond Butler*, Knight, *John Talbot*, *Richard Sheeth*, and *James Tobyes*, Sheriffe of the Countie of *Typperary* (the Erle hymself beinge then in *England*) wherein he did sharply reprend them, much marvelling at the Inconstancie of some of them, which not longe synce complained of the Partialitie, that the Ministers of that Liberty exercised; and of the rest he marvelled much moer, that being learned and wise, would bringe the Liberties into dispute, by making of undue Excuses. He further argued, That if they of the Libertie were answerable upon

upon the Command of the Lord Deputie (as he trusted they would not stand to Defence of the contrary) then were they by the same Authoritie answerable before the State of Presidencie, which had the lyke Jurisdiction over them. Also he signified that there were exempted fower Causes out of the Erle of *Ormond's* Patentt, which was reserved to the Crowne (and which the State of Presidencie had Power to determyn) because it were not convenient to expresse the Causes, or to name the Places unto them where the Offences were committed: He did assure them that he had not byn yet of Mynd to make any Question of the Erle of *Ormond's* Liberties; neither would he hereafter, unlesse by standing in unreasonable Things they forced hym thereto. For the Erle of *Ormond* was his very Frend, and one whom he entirely loved, which yet in case of Justice he was not to respect. And howsoever they seem'd to let the Apparence of them in that Liberty, yet the Erle (as the President affirmed) commaunded at his Departure, That any should be sent whom the President

G

would

would call for. Lykewise the President told them, That in the End he should be found a better Friend to the Erle of Ormond, then any that by standing in unreasonable Matters would call his Liberties into Question; and he had as yet borne but too much with the Abuses committed within that Libertie, in punishing of which he had not seene Earnestness in them; neither did he promise but that now and then, as Occasion should serve, he would use Martial Law within that Libertie; and if he were hindred by theyr dilatory Excuses, from the Administration of Justice (as by their Means occasioned so to do) he must call the other Partes of the Liberties to Triall. And so he required them, and in hir Majestie's Name estsones commanded them to send the Sheriffe of that Countie (and the Persons for whom he sent unto them before) by the xiiiith Day of that Moneth. Which Letter bears Date at *Limbrick*, the 2d of *March 1572.*

THIS, and the like plain Dealing, purchased the Lord President much Evil-Will, whereby there were heaped on him divers causeles Complayntes (as he thought) prosecuted with such Vehemencie, and sometimes shadowed with such Probabilitie and countenanced by greate Men in such Sorte, that in Parte they were beleved; and he being not at hand to answer his Adversaries Objections, had now and then some sharpe Letters sent unto hym out of *England*, wherefore the President did determine to come into *England*, with Intente to cleare hymselfe of such Complaynts as were preferr'd against hym; and tho' he had not Licence so to doe, yet knowing that he left the Contrie in good Quietnes, and the People peaceable, he did presume and hope, that his sodayn Departure from that Service would be the better excused, because he left the Contrie in quiett, and no Enemie of the State to take Advantage of his Absence. Which Adventure in hym (although it succeeded well with hym) is noe fuer or safe President for other Presidents or Governors

to follow, because we see, that sithence that Time some others have felte the Smart for cominge from theyr Charge without Commaund or Licence. And it is a certayne Rule, that those Rulers which being placed by theyr Prince in any great Commaund of People, or of Trust, doe leave theyr Charge without Commission or Authoritie from their Sovereigne, or such as may give Libertie so to doe, thereby do subject themselves to theyr Prince's Displeasure, the Danger of the Lawes, and the Envie of their Evill-Willers about the Prince, whose Persuasions of Contempt of Danger, and of exemplary Punishment, may in this Case much prevayle with the Prince, and bringe the Partie so offending into much Perill. Yet the Lord President, with this Resolution, setting Things in Order for the present Government of *Mounster*, and making up his Accompts, departeth thence about the begynning of *March* 1573, and so shortly arived in *England*; where we must now salute hym by his first and proper Name of *Sir John Perrott*, having hitherto given hym that Title which did belonge to his Office.

Office. When *Sir John Perrott* came first to the Court of *England*, it was thought that the Queene would have byn highly offended at his coming over without Licence, and that she would have shewed some Signes of hir Indignation towards hym, which some of his back Friends went about to procure to incense the Queene, and to aggravate Matters agaynst hym. Yet as soon as *Sir John Perrott* came to speach with the Queene, and had related unto hir the State of the Contrie, the Particulers of his Service, and the Cause of his cominge over, with Answer unto such Objections as had byn made agaynst hym in his Absence: Her Majestie (contrary to the Expectation of many) did allow of his Doings, and commended his Indevours. Insoemuch, that hir Highness would have him to returne speedily, doubtinge that in his Absence, some Disquietnes or civill Disention might arise. To the which *Sir John Perrott* answered, That for the generall State of the Province, it was soe well settled, as noe new Alteration on the sodayne neede to be doubted. But yet there were divers Par-

ticulers sumwhat amisse, which might be amended without any great Difficulty. And for the present, he thought there some Defects, both in establishinge the State of Presidencie, and the Allowance fitt for his Place ; as for other Services incident to the same, which being allow'd by hir Highness, he was readye to serve hir there whensoever it should please hir to appoynte hym. And that the same might be the better understood, he presented a Plott unto the Queen to be consider'd by hir Majestie, and hir Privy Counsell, which was in these Words.

Necessary Considerations for the Quiett maynteining of the State of MOUNSTER.

I. FIRST of all, that hir Majestie would write sharpe Letters to the Arch-Buyshops and Buyshops of that Province, to deal more carefully in theyr severall Charges than hitherto they have done, in settinge forth of God's Word within theyr severall Diocesses; and to cause the decayed Churches to be re-edified, placing in them good and meete Ministers, by which theyr
good

good Example, the People will the sooner grow to know theyr Dutie to God, and perfect Obedience to theyr Prince.

II. ALSO that the same Buyshops be in-joyn'd to pay from henceforth the first Fruites, and twentieth Part of all the Spirituall Livings, within ech of their Diocesses, which they themselves have hitherto deteyned in their owne Hands, (although by the Laws of the Land, it ought to have come unto hir Majesties Use) and that they do account for soe much thereof, as hath come unto theyr Hands, which will amount unto noe small Summe.

III. THAT the said Buyshops shall minister the Oath generally unto all Priestes, within theyr severall Diocesses, and to deprive such as doe or will refuse the same, placing others of honest Behaviour in their Roomes.

IV. THAT forthwith a President be sent thither, being both valiant, wise, and sound of Religion, with other Qualitys meet for his Place.

V. THAT likewise a principall Justice be sent thither, and he to be learned and juste; and farther, for the Execution of Justice, he and the second Justice should be injoynd twice in the Yere to keepe Sessions in severall Shiers, as ordinarily it is used in *England*.

VI. THAT there be sent thither two of the most honest Attorneys out of the Marches of *Wales*, for the better instructing of the Attorneys, there in following the Course of the sayd Court.

VII. THAT farther Allowances of Wages may be made unto those, which shall serve the President.

VIII. To take into hir Majesties Hands all Liberties within the same Province, except of Cities and Townes corporate.

IX. THE Lord Deputie to be written unto, that *Desmond* may be reduced into a Countie adjoyning unto it, Part of *Dooly*, and all that is betwen the River of *Mange*

Mange and the Erle of Clancarties Countrie; the same Countie to be called by some other Name, as the Queenes Countie, or the lyke.

X. THAT Commissioners be appoynted to make Agreement between the Lords of *Mounster* and their Freeholders, which my self have caused them to yeld unto; and to tie those Lords to desist from theyr wonted Exactions. Provided that if they at any Time hereafter shall take any of those forbidden Exactions, that then such Rents as the Freeholders ought to pay to their sayd Lords, to fall by Way of Excheat into her Majesties Hands.

XI. THAT the Surveyor be comaunded anew to survey all hir Majesties Lands within the sayd Province, (not being leased) namely, *Kyllor*, the Abbey of *Adome*, the Priory of *Balmesketon*, the Abbey of *Alough*, with divers other Abbeys, Monasterys, and Priorys, never hertofore surveyed, or put in Charge; and to rate the same at reasonable Rents. For of late one *Fitz-Williams*, coming noe farther then to
Waterford,

Waterford, did survey divers Abbeyes, Parsonages, and other hir Majesties Revenews there, at such great and high Rents, whereby he made a large and greate Book (as one that would show hymselfe a good Officer) but by Reason of such Survey, those Lands have ever since layen waste, noe Man manuring the same, to hir Majesties noe small Losse and Detriment.

XII. THAT Commissioners be appoynted to view the Liberties of all Citties, and Townes corporate, within the said Province; and to see what Costomes they ought to have by theyr Charters. For they doe not only take such Costomes, as, at the first, were given of the Thinges costomable by Graunt of the said Charters, but also many other, that, by Act of Parliament, have byn given since unto the Province; which by no Meanes they ought to have.

XIII. THAT two trustie Persons be appoynted, one to be Auditor, and the other Recever within the sayd Province, with reasonable Fee to them assigned, which will profit hir Majestie five times more than

than the Valew of the same Fee to them allotted.

XIV. THAT Costomers, Comptrollers, and Searchers, be appoynted in all Citties, and Port Towns, where her Majestie hath not alredy given her whole Costomes; they to receve all such Costomes, as from henceforth grow due unto hir Highness.

XV. THAT all her Majesties Lands, not leased, be let unto *Englishmen* as neere as may be, for that they beinge placed in severall Places within the Province, will more truly advertise the President and State, of Thinges chauncing neere them, then any of the *Irisherie* will doe.

XVI. THAT a Parliament may be had, whereby may be established the lyke Ordinances for *Mounster* as is for *Wales*; for in Effect the lyke misorders, which heretofore have byn in *Wales*, were of late in *Mounster*.

AND farther, That in the same Parliament it may be enacted, that it shall be lawfull

lawfull for the Lord Deputy and Counsellors, to appoynt Commissioners for Devision of the Shiers into severall Hundreds. And lykewise the Lords, in their severall Seigniories, to be assigned what Excheates shall come unto them. And that by like Commission, the Lords Seigniories may be devided into Manors, whereby Courts Barons may be kept for the Peoples more Ease, in the determyning of small Causes.

XVII. THAT there be a base Coyne of i^d , ij^d , $iiij^d$ coyned, and the Mynt for coyning thereof may be at *Lymbrick*. And to call in the halfe-fac'd Groats, with other old Coynes, and the Residue of the Coyne to passe as it doth.

XVIII. THAT the Castell of *Mayne* may be re-edified, which will be done with one 200 Markes Charge. And that the Priory of *Kylla* be annexed unto it, whereby it will maynteyn the Captain and xij Men, defraying hir Majesties Charge for keepinge thereof; which should not be suffer'd to passe from the Crowne, because
it

Sir John Perrott, Kt. 93

it will always master *Kerrey*, and the Erle of *Clancarties* Country.

XIX. THAT 200 l. of the sayd base Coyne be allowed unto the Inhabitants of *Kylmalock*, for the fortifyinge of their Wall, and castinge of the Diches thereof, which Place, servinge most aptly of all others in *Mounster*, will be at all Times as a Fort and Randevous for hir Majestie to assemble her People, when any Occasion of Service shall be required.

XX. THAT 200 l. of the like Coyne may be allow'd unto the Dingle, towards the makinge of a Wall about the same Towne, the Residue (although they be poore Men) themselves will furnish, and this the rather, because the same Town hath faythfully serv'd hir Majestie, being much spighted therefore; and because also that it is an apt Place for the Prince to have Footinge.

XXI. THAT one thousand Marks be allow'd towards the buyldinge the Castell of *Lymbrick*. Whereof 600 Marcks out
cf

94 *The LIFE of*

of the Queenes Coffers, and the Residue to be had of the Fynes, together with the Tymber of the Abbeyes neere unto the said Cittie, and others without the same. Whereby an apt Place, both for the Deputy or Lord President, may be made to reside in; yea, and for the Prince if neede shall soerequier. The which Castell being so re-edified, whereunto may well be brought the Ward of *Dongarvan*, it will be no small Meanes to reduce *Conoght* the sooner to Obedience; and is not farre distant from the Countie of *Tiberary*, nere unto *Mac Bryan O Donagh*, and *William Omurlians* Countris; *Conelagh* and *Arrathie*, and *Connobere*, which have byn the worst Places of all *Mounster*.

XXII. THAT one other Howse for the President may be buylt at *Corke*, or nere thereunto; for that he, at this present, hath no one Howse to abyd in within any Part of the Province, but is driven (to his noe small Charge) to hyer in eche where he cometh two Howses for hym and his, besyds other Store-howses for his necessary Provisions.

XXIII. THAT

XXIII. THAT an other small Castell, being in *Arlongh*, called *Ballyny Court*, may lykewise be buylded up; which will be don with the matter of L pound. Wherby if any Rebelle should hereafter start out, drawing hymselfe into the sayd Wood, he might not be able there longe to continew.

XXIV. THAT all Offices of Collector, Comptroller of the Impost, with Costomers, and Searchers, within the sayd Province, may be at the disposinge of the President, for the better Recompence of such as shall serve under hym; because that there is nothing else for hym to give them: And noe Man of Account will serve without some Recompence.

XXV. THAT the Lease of the Personage of *Dongarvan*, by some convenient Meanes, might be had agayn into hir Majesties Hands; and the same, together with the Abbeyes, and other Personages and Lands belonging to hir Highnes, may be annexed to the State of Presidency, for the better

96 *The LIFE of*

better maynteyning therof: For that my selfe have not hitherto had, by any Meanes or Wayes, the Benifitt of one Myte, beyds my ordinary Allowance, towards the necessary finding either of my Men or Horses. And whether that the bare Allowance of *per Diem*, will find a Horseman his chiefe Horse and Furniture, and vi d. eche Footeman and his Furniture, without ceasing; may easily be judged by the Lord Chamberlayn, who best knoweth what therto belongeth.

XXVI. THAT if hir Majestie will lend 6000 l. of the foresayd Coyne unto such Persons, which shall give good Assurance for the same, to repay it in the lyke Money at the Ende of fower Yeres, hir Highnes, in Consideration therof, shall have cutt downe the great Woods of *Domsynnen*, *Arlongh*, *Kylhoghy*, *Connelagh* Woods, *Glanfleske* the great Wood, and other Woods within that Province. In which Workes will be imployed 2 or 300 Men, meete for Service if neede should requier; without any Charge unto hir Majestie.

Wherby

Wherby also, not any Rebelle shall hereafter have any Succor or Place of Strength in those Woods, to put hir Highnes unto further Charge: Therewith Shipps may be buylded at *Yonghall*.

XXVII. THAT hir Highnes doe take Order to pardon the Erle of *Ormond's* three Brethren, and *James Fitz-Morice*, or otherwise to determyn of them; for as yet they stand doubtfull what shall become of them, neither is any Man certayn what they will doe. Wherefore in my Opinion it were not amisse, upon Assurance, to graunt them Pardon for that is past.

XXVIII. THAT some comfortable Letter be written unto Sir *John of Desmond*, touching my good Report made of hym; and that lykewise he be put in hope to be in Assurance of a 100*l. per Annum* in Lease, according to hir Majesties Letters written unto the Lord Deputy: Which may be given out of Parcell of the *Whitt Knights*, the *Knights of the Valleys Lands*, with other escheate Lands; as by the Lord
H Deputy

Deputy and the Lord President shall be thought meete. And this the rather, in respect of his Willingnes to serve dutifully. He hath agreed to all the Articles prescribed unto hym by the Lord Deputy and me, with the Consent of other the Counsell there. And also his Estate is but poore, and therfor to be holpen, he being faythfull, and his Service necessary.

BESYDES this Project propounded by Sir *John Perrott* for the Goverment of *Monster*; he layd downe therewith the Valew of the severall Coynes, both of Silver and base Moneys, at that present current in *Ireland*, to be reduced into a baser Coyne: All which Moneys, both of Silver and of baser Mettall (wherein also some Silver was conteyned) at that present soe confusedly running in that Realme; He would have by hir Majesties Commandment called in, and brought unto the Dealers of the Mynt to be erected at *Lymbrick*; and in liew of the same, a base Money of a i d. ii d. iii d. to be coyned, either of half the Goodnes of the sayd Silver Moneys or lesse, as best should

should lyke hir Highnes : Thereby assuring hymselfe, that great Advantage would accrew towards the Accomplishment of the foresayd Service. And for all other Sorts of Coyne either of Silver or Gold, both *English*, *French*, or *Spanish*, the same to passe as it did before. The Names of the sayd Coynes, which he would have foe called in and converted, were these.

THE old half Face Groat, unclypt, conteyning 4 old King *Henry's* Pence; the which, at the rate of 4 Smulkines (otherwise Rose Pence) beinge base Mettall, allowed in Value for every old Peney, makes 16 Smul. And allowing three of the same for every current *English* Peney, amounteth unto in *Starlinge* Money

vd. $\frac{1}{3}$ pt.d.

THE halfe old Groat conteyneth 8 of the said base Smulkins; of the which allowing lijd. $\frac{1}{3}$ pt.d. to every *English* Peny 3, facit *Starling*

THE old Peney conteyn-
ing 4 of the sayd base Smul-
kins; which, after the rate
aforesayd, *facit* Starling

i d. $\frac{1}{3}$ pt. d.

THE old halfe Face Groat
clypt, wherof are many in *Ire-*
land, is worth of our current
Money but

iiij d.

THE old fresh Groat, where-
of are many and sundry Stampes,
viz. 3 Crownes, and a whole
Face crowned, both which doe
conteyne ech of them 9 of
the sayd small Smulkines *le*
piece; which *facit* Sterlinge
either of them

iiij d.

THE Peeces being coyned
by the late King *Henry, Ed-*
ward, Phi. & Mary, for xii d.
current Money, and now be-
inge called in by the Name
of a black Seston, at the Va-
lew of current Money

iiij d.

ANOTHER of lyke base Mo-
ney coyned in the sayd Kinges
Time, current in *Ireland* by
the Name of a White Groat, } i d. $\frac{1}{3}$ pt.d.
conteyning 4 of those base
Smulkines, *facit* Sterlinge }

ANOTHER base Peece coyn-
ed in *Henry* the VIII's Time,
being current there, by the
Name of a red Harpe, hold- } ii d.
ing in Valew 3 of the sayd
Smulkines, *facit* Sterlinge }

THE Alteration of these Coynes, the
Callinge of them in, and the causing other
Coyne of lesse Valew to be current, *Sir*
John Perrott helde as a good Helpe for
the Accomplishing of all the other fore-
named Services and Purposes; which
conteyned divers Poyntes in one Plott:
As for the planting of Religion in that
Province, being the surest Knott to the
Heartes of the Subjects in the Bands of
Fayth and Loyaltie unto theyr Prince:

For the due administring of Justice unto all Men, according to the Lawes of *England*: For the keeping of the People in Peace, and the answering of hir Majesties Rents and Revenues more assuredly: For the setting hir Lands at more Certainty: For the dividing of that Province into Shiers and Signiories: The buylding of certayne Fortes and Castells, some to bridle the Rebels, and some for the State of Presidency: For the cuttinge downe of Woods, which were then Harbors of, and Fortresses unto Theeves, Rebels, and Outlawes: And the buyldinge of Shippes out of the sayd Woods for the Queenes Service. All which Services as we see Sir *John Perrott* set down a Course to accomplish without any great Charge unto hir Majestie, Burden or Trouble to hir Subjects. Which Plott he first presented to the Queene, and the same to be considered of by the Lords of hir Privy Counsell. The Queene lyked well of the Plott, and soe did some of hir Counsell; but some others myslyked it, more because it was his Doeing, and his Desier, then for any Defect that they founde therein:

therin: Yet they seemed to shew some Reasons of the Inconveniencies of some of those Poyntes; and soe the same was hindered.

THE Queene, notwithstanding, would have had *Sir John Perrott* to goe over as President agayn; but he perceiving his Course to be crossed, and fearing least in his Absence the Complayntes of his Adversaries might prevayle (wherof he had former Experience) did then excuse the Undertaking of that Service, by his Disability of Body, (being touched with that Country Disease, and one of his Legges much payned with Colde which he had taken in his Winter Services): And therfor prayed that he might be licensed to repayer into the Country for the Recovery of his Health; which being graunted, after Leave taken of the Queene, he departed home to his Howse.

AT *Sir John Perrott* his coming into the Country he continewed there for a Time, as well in settling Courses for his private State, as in caringe and travelling

104 *The LIFE of*

for the publick State of the Contrie ; wherein he bare Authority, being one of the Counsell of the Marches (besyds his other Offices in the Country). And soe he tooke Truce for a Season with his Travells ; yet soe as he was seldom free from Ill-willers, and such as did oppose themselves agaynst hym, as much as they might, which were divers Gentlemen of the better Sorte in that Contry wherein he dwelt ; and they, to strengthen themselves the more agaynst hym, drew in *Walter Erle of Essex* to be theyr Back, because some of them depended on hym, who had a Howse called *Lanfey* in *Pembrok-shiere*, where he sometimes resyded, neere Sir *John Perrot's* Castell of *Carew*. What past betwixt hym and them in privat Quarells and in publicke Contentions I over-passe, and will not troble the Reader therewith ; partly because Sir *John Perrot's* Carriage therein is well known to all that Countrie, where it is fresh in the Memory of many yet livinge ; and partly for that this Erle of *Essex* was a worthy Nobleman, wise, bountiful and affable (whose Daughter afterwards was married

ried unto *Sir John Perrott's* eldest Sonne
Sir Thomas Perrott Knight); therefore to
advance the Prayse of the one, or to di-
minish the Honor of the other (they be-
ing both dead) might founde and favor
either of Vanitie, Partiallitie or Malice:
Besyds that the Recital of privat Quarrells,
Duellions, or Contentions, is not soe
proffitable for the Reader, or Praise-worthy
in the Writer. Only this much may be
alledged (as an Annotation not Imperti-
nent in this matter, and for other mens
Instructions,) That as there were at that
Time some, which (by bringinge of false
Reports, and doeinge of evill Offices be-
twixt the Erle of *Essex* and *Sir John Per-*
rott) sought to incence and sette them far-
ther asunder, then otherwise they would
have byn; soe is it usual that, in most
Places, Personages of best Quallitie and
Reputation are devided in Love, and
sometimes seperated from all mutuall So-
cietie (if not driven into Discord and Di-
sention,) by such as, (to serve theyr owne
Turnes,) are allway soe apte to nourishe
Contention betwixt Men of best Cal-
linge and Condition; wherof if the better
Sort

Sort be not wise inoughe to take Heede,
they can hardly eschew the Harme.

Now when Sir *John Perrott* had reposed hymselfe for a while in the Countrie, and sometimes repayred to the Court (as his Occasions served) for some few Yeres after he cam from being President of *Mounster* in *Ireland*; he was sodaynly sent for out of that Contrie unto the Court, to take Charge of some of the Queene's Shipps, which were to be sent unto Sea (agaynst the Invasion of the *Spaniards*) upon Intelligence received, That *James Fitz-Moris* (who before submitted hymselfe to Sir *John Perrott* when he was Lord President of *Mounster*) had synce byn in *Spayne*, and procured the Promise of certayn Shippes and Men to be sent into *Ireland*, to invade and disquiett the State of *Ireland*, especially the Province of *Mounster*.

THIS beinge knowen to the Queene and hir Privy Counsell, they sent for Sir *John Perrott* to take the Commaund of such Shippes and Pinaceffe as should be
made

made redie to intercept, or interrupt the King of *Spayne* his Navie and Forces which were designed for *Ireland*. He being sent for by Post, mad such Speede in coming to the Court, that he came from *Pembrockshier* to *Grenwich* in lesse then three Dayes; there being about 200 Myles Distance betwixt both the Places. Infoemuch that when he came unto the Queene's Presence, she marvelled at his soe speedy repayer thither; and told hym, she thought he had not herde from hir soe soone: Yes Madam, quoth he, and have made as much Hast as I might to come unto your Majestie. Soe methinckes, sayd the Queene, but how have you don to settle your State in the Contrie? And it lyke your Majestie, sayd *Sir John Perrott*, I have taken this Care for all; that setting all privat Busines aside, in respect of your Majesties Service, I have in the Contrie appoynted the white Sheepe to keepe the blacke: For I may well inoughe adventure them, when I ame willing to adventure my Life in your Majesties Service. With which Answer the Queene was well pleased,

fed, and soe tooke hym asyde, with whom she conferred privatly for a Time; then dismissing hym and appoynting hym to receve farther Directions for that Service from the Lords of hir Privy Counsell. Then did Sir *John Perrott* prepare for that Voiage with all convenient Speede. He had with hym fiftie Men in Orange tawny Cloakes, wherof divers were Gentlemen of good Birth and Qualitie. Also he had a Noyce of Musicians with hym, beinge his owne Servants. He was served all in Silver Plate, with all Things else sutable: And soe being royally furnished in all Respects, he departed from *London* abouts *August*, and goeing from thence by Barge, he had with hym divers Noblemen and Gentlemen who did accompany hym unto the Shipps. As they lay in their Barge agaynst *Grenwich* where the Queene kept hir Court, Sir *John Perrot* sent one of his Gentlemen ashore with a Diamond in a Token, unto Mistris *Blanch Parry*, willing hym to tell hir, that a Diamond coming unlooked for, did allways bring good Looke with it: Which the Queene hearing of, sent Sir
John

Sir John Perrott, Kt. 109

John Perrott a fair Jewell hanged by a white Cypresse; synifying withall, that as longe as he wore that for hir Sake, she did beleve, with God's Healpe, he should have noe Harme. Which Message and Jewell *Sir John Perrot* receved joyfully, and he returned Answer unto the Queene, That he would weare that for his Soveraigne's Sake, and doubted not with God's Favor to retorne hir Shipps in Saffetie, and either to bringe the *Spaniards* (if they came in his Way) as Prisoners, or else to sinck them in the Seas. Soe as *Sir John Perrott* passed by in his Barge, the Queene looking out at the Window shaked hir Fanne, and put out hir Hand tawards him; who making a low Obeyfance, put the Scarffe and Jewell about his Necke, which the Queene sent hym: Beinge arrived at *Gyllingham*, where the Queene's Shipps rode, *Sir John Perrott* feasted on Shippboard, such Noblemen and Gentlemen as came with hym thither.

THE

THE Names of the Queene's Shippes and Pinasses, which Sir *John Perrott* commaunded, were these,

THE *Benenge*, wherof Sir *John Perrott* was Admirall; the *Dread-Naught*, wherof Mr. *William Gorge* was Vice-Admiral; the *Foresight*, in which Mr. *Nicholas Gorge* was Reare-Admirall; the *Catis*, of which Captayn *Yorke* was Captayne; the *Swiftsuer*, in which Captayne *Peirce* commaunded; the *Seabright*, wherof Captayn *Ward* was Captayn.

WITH theise Shippes Sir *John Perrott* sett out from *Gyllingham* to the *Downes*, and there rode at Ankor one Night; from thence they sett forwards to *Falmouth*, where they remayned for a Sevenight, and sent to the Court in Post, from whence Answer was returned in convenient Time. And during the Time of theyr Aboad at *Falmouth*, some of the Gentlemen and Seamen went to Shoare, and soe did Sir *John Perrott* hymselfe, whom Sir *John Kyllegrew* enterteyned
very

Sir John Perrott, Kt. III

very kyndly, passing the Time in Wrestling, Hurling, and such-lyke Exercises, betwixt the Seamen, Servingmen, and that Countreymen. At legthe they departed from thence, but were put into *Plimoth* by Stormes and contrary Windes; yet they loosed soone from thence, and soe sett to Sea for *Ierland*, where they arived at *Baltimore*. At *Sir John Perrott's* landing there came unto hym the Lord *Finney*, with his Lady, Children and Followers; allso almost all the Countrey thereabouts flocked about hym; and by reason of his former Goverment in that Country, they bare such Affection towards hym, that the People came in greate Numbers as neere unto hym as they might, some of them imbracing his Legges and coveting to touche any Part of his Body: Which the Vice-Admirall beinge a Shippebord did perceve, and thincking that they came to doe hym some Hurt, did determyn to turne the Broad-Side of his Ship towards them, and to discharge the full Ordinance upon them; but being informed that they came in Love to see and salute *Sir John Perrott*, then he altered

tered his Purpose, and landed to accompany hym, where they were all enterteyned as well as the Fashion of that Contry could afford. From *Baltimore*, after some Dayes Stay there, they sayled to *Corke*, where they stayed as long. And from *Corke* they coasted to *Waterford*, and in theyr Way about *Kynsale* they mett with the *Seabright*, which had byn sent to the Coast of *Spayne* to discover.

ON Sir *John Perrott's* Arivall at *Waterford* he mett there with the Lord Cheife Justice, that worthy Gentleman Sir *William Drewry*, who was newly come off of a Journey and was fallen Sicke; soe that being very feeble in his Bedd, he did Knight Sir *William Pelham*, who succeeded hym in Goverment, Sir *Tho. Perrott* the Sonne of Sir *John Perrott*, with Sir *William Gorges* and one other; and within fower or five Dayes after Sir *William Dru-ry* died. At which Time Sir *John Perrott* being redie to depart thence with the Queene's Shippes; the Counsell and Nobilitie of *Ireland* were very desirous that he should take the Sword to be Lord
Cheife

Sir John Perrott, Kt. 113

Cheife Justice, untill farther Directions were receved from *England*, for the Discharge of that Place. But he refused soe to doe; saying, That he had allredy taken the Charge of the Queenes Shippes, which Service he must discharge, and accounte for, befor he might undertake any other, and that being don, he wou'd be redy to be imployed, as he should be commaunded by the Queenes Majestie.

SIR John Perrott remayned a while at *Waterford*, and thereabouts upon the *Irish* Coste, to give Impediment unto the *Spaniards* Landing if they came that Way. At length when he saw the Season of the Yere was past for them, without great Perill, to attempt any thing agaynst *Ireland*, and understanding by other Intelligence that they had given over their Enterprise for that Yere; *Sir John Perrott* determyned to returne for *England*, and to deliver up the Queenes Shippes without spending more Victuell Money and Time in vayne. Soe they sayled

I home-

homewards untill they came neere the *Kentish Downs*, harde by which Place they espied a Pirat, one *Deryfold*, unto whom the Admirall Sir *John Perrott* gave Chase, and followed hym to the Coste of *Flaunders*: After the taking of hym, coming back to fetch the *Downes* agayn, the Ship strake Ground on the *Kentish Knocks*; where the Queenes Ship, with all the Persons that were in hir, stood in greate Perill to be cast away; what betwixt the Danger of the Place and Violence of the Weather.

At the which Time they made all noe other Accounte, but that a speedie Death should end all theyr Accounts. Infoemuch that all Sir *John Perrott's* neereft Friends and Followers came to take theyr last Farewell of hym, (as they then thought;) amongst the rest his Sonne Sir *Thomas Perrott* was one: To whom he sayd, Well Boy, God bleffe thee, and I give thee my Blessing. I would to God thou wert a shore, and the Queenes Ship saffe; then I should

should care the lesse for my selfe. With that Wish and Resolution Sir *John Perrott* committed hymselfe to the Mercie of God, and comforted them that were about hym; they All continuing that Night hopeles of Life, or of Deliverance from Danger: Untill at length by God's good Favor they were driven to Sea, and soe did remayne in Stormes and Tempestes for fower Dayes and a halfe, not knowing where they were: For the Master of the Queenes Ship, called *Gray*, had lost cleane all the Knowledge of his Course; beinge taken with Tempest in the midst of the Night, and soe continuing in Myste and fowell Weather, as the Violence of the Waves and Windes would carie them: Neither had they easily come to any better Knowledge of theyr Being, but that they were directed by one *Deryfold*, the Pirat whom they had taken (and the following of whom was the Cause of all theyr Danger, soe the Callinge of hym was the Cause of theyr secondary Deliverance.) He was drawn out of the Bilbows, and his Direction was more

certayn then the Master's of the Queenes Ship; for he had usually haunted that Coste as a Rover. When *Deryfold* was called upon for his Opinion, whereabouts they were; he demaunded where they first lost theyr Course? What Windes they had sithence, and how long they sayled by eche Winde? Which being signified, he presently conjectured whereabouts they should be, and aymed at it very neerely, appoynting what Course they should take. In the Mideft of the Weeke the Ship lost hir Mayn-sayle, being stripped off from the Yard and from hir Tackes and Suites, and was never found agayne: Soe that they were constrained of two Bunnetts to make a mayne Course, without which the Ship could have made noe Way, but would have byn swallowed in the Sea. At the length they were driven neere *Harewich*, where they mett with two Hoyes who tolde them first the certayne Place where they were. From thence they came to *Harewich*, and stayed there two Dayes: Soe they sayled into the *Thames*.

At

Sir John Perrott, Kt. 117

AT Sir *John Perrott's* first Coming to the Court, Objections were layed agaynst hym, (as Envie did ever accompany his greatest Actions) that he had mispent much Time, and put the Queene to unnecessary Charges, besyds the Perill of hir Ship. And this was suggested by *Gray*, the Master of the Ship, sett on (as it was sayd) by greater Men then hymselfe. And he envying that *Deryfold* should have the Prayse from hym, (for whose Pardon Sir *John Perrott* made Suite) or that it should be knowen, that the Master of the Ship should not know his Course soe neere his owne Home, who dwelt at *Harwich*; therfor *Gray* did as much as he could excuse hymselfe, and lay the Faulte on Sir *John Perrott*. But as it fell out there was one *Cesar*, then Sir *John Perrott's* Page, who, thoe he were soe yonge that few supposed he had taken any Heede what had byn don in that Voyage, yet he did every Night carefully lay downe in Writting, what had byn don that Day, what Windes they had, and what Courses they took,

118 *The LIFE of*

with all the Circumstances belonging to that Voiage, from the begynning to the endinge: Which being founde out, and the same appering to accord with the Relation of Sir *John Perrott* in every Poynte; and the Queene being satisfi- ed, as also hir Counsell, that Sir *John Perrott* did performe as much as was possible for hym to doe: The Accusa- tion was answered, and the Accuser did gayne noe Credit thereby, but rather Reproch.

YET, nevertheles, Sir *John Perrott* wanted noe Adversarys, whatsoever he attempted or performed: For presently, upon his Returne from Sea, one *Thomas Wyriott*, a Justice, and a headie Man, did preferre a Petition, with Ar- tickles, agaynst Sir *John Perrott* unto the Queene; which Petition was refer- red by the Queene unto the Master of the Requests, to be examined and reported. The Master of the Requests tooke Paynes to heare the Cause; and in Conclusion certified the Queene, that there was noe Cause of *Wyriott's* Com-
playnts

playnts agaynst *Sir John Perrott*. *Wyriott* was not soe satisfied, but complayned to the Queene of the Master of the Requests, that he had made a partiall Report for *Sir John Perrott*. Whereupon the Queenes Majestie referred the Examynation of his Cause unto the Lords of hir Privey Counsell; who did lykewise heare the Matter, and found that it was Malice, and noe iuste Cause which *Wyriott* had to preferre agaynst *Sir John Perrott*; which they did in lyke maner make knowen to hir Majestie. *Wyriott* continuing his Malice, or rather his Madnes in this, made the lyke Complaynt unto the Queene agaynst hir Privey Counsell, as he did before agaynst the Master of the Requests: Whereupon he was committed first by the Captayn of the Guard, under whose Band he served, unto the *Marshialsie*; and *Sir John Perrott* lefte hym there, at what Time he had purged hymselfe of all Complayntes mad agaynst hym by his Adversaries, and had Lidence to depart into the Contrie, for his Health, and for the Disposing of his Affayeirs,

which he lefte in evill Order at his fodayne Departure from thence unto his Sea Voiage.

SIR *John Perrott* departing into the Contrey lefte *Wyriott* in Prison, by Order of the Privey Counsell, that he should not be released from thence, but to remayne Prisoner untill that he should finde sufficient Suerties to enter into 200l. Bands, and hymselfe to be bound in 500l. to answer Sir *John Perrott* in an Action of the Case. Yet Sir *John Perrott* was noe sooner gon into the Countrey, but within short Time *Wyriott* found such Friends, (not soe much for his owne Sake, as for the evill Affection which they bare unto Sir *John Perrott*) that they did not only procure *Wyriott's* Inlargment, (without entring into Bonds as was ordered) but also Letters were written from some of the Privey Counsell unto the Justice of the Assisse, in that Cyrquite wherin Sir *John Perrott's* Leving lay; to take the Examination and Triall of such Profes as should be produced, either by
Sir

Sir John Perrott, Kt. 121

Sir John Perrott agaynst *Wyriott*, or by *Wyriott* agaynst hym, touching such Ar- tickles as should be tendered unto them: Whereas, in truth, *Sir John Perrott* had not objected any thing agaynst hym at all, but only answered his Objections be- for the Privey Counsell. When the Jud- ges of that Cyrquite had receved this Letter from the Privey Counsell, they wrote unto *Sir John Perrott*, lyinge sick then at his Castell of *Carew* of a sweat- ing Sicknes, (which was then common in that Country) signifying unto hym the Effect of the Letter receved from theyr Lordships, and requiring his Re- payer unto *Harverfordwest*, where the Sessions were then holden. As soone as *Sir John Perrott* was certified ther- of, he perposed to performe what they required, allthough it might be per- chaunce with the Perill of his Life; and soe he came to *Harverfordwest*: Where *Wyriott* attended the Justices, and had procured from them Precepts to bringe in all such Persons, as he sup- posed would prove the Poyntes object- ed by hym.

THE

THE Artickles he exhibited were abouts LXX, and the Witnessses, he had convented, were about that Number. When Sir *John Perrott* perused the Artickles, he told the Judges it was a strange Course, (and as he thought never used before) that a Man's whole Life should be ripped up without any Action or Forme of Law; but (quoth he) here are many Matters suggested agaynst me, and yet if one of theise Artickles can be proved, I will confesse all the Rest to be trew. Then they fell to examyn the Particulers, and in fine found that *Wyriott* was not able to make due Prooffe, and to justifie any Part of his Accusations, or bitter Exclamations: Soe Sir *John Perrott* was cleared, and his Adversarie departed with Shame.

SIR *John Perrott*, having thus purged and acquitted hymselfe, was yet much greved that his whole Life shou'd be called in Question, without any Cause as he conceived. And therfor
pre-

Sir John Perrott, Kt. 123

presuming on his owne Innocencie, and the Queenes Majesties Indifferency, he wrote Letters, as well to the Queene and to the Privy Counsell, as to some speciall Noblemen of the Counsell, whom he honored, and of whom he was beloved, grevously complayning of the hard Measure which he had received; that his Life should be from his Cradell soe rypped up upon mere Suggestion and Slaunder. The Tenor of Sir John Perrott's Letter to the Queenes Majestie was this,

MAY it please your most Excellent Majestie to graunte me Pardon, in that I presume upon your Gracious Goodnes, seekinge noe other Meanes, (because I serve your Majestie only and follow noe other) to defend me from Injuries or to helpe me unto Good, but only from your sacred Handes. Whilst I served your Highnes in Ireland, and sithence, there were fower or five severall Persons animated by some, my Contraries, unjustly to exclayne, as well unto your Majestie as unto my Lords of your Privy Counsell,
agaynst

124 *The LIFE of*

agaynst me with Intent to bringe me to Discredite: Whose Lordshipes (upon the hearing of apparent Wrongs they offered me) committed them all unto the Prison of the Marshialsey; where I leste one Wyriott, being one of them, in Prison, when your Highnes lisenced me last (after I had served upon the Seaes) to repaier into the Contrie: Who by some indirect and unusuall Meanes, without Byll or Artickle offered agaynst me, or Calling me to answer, gatt a Letter thence unto the Justices of Assise of theise three Shiers, (where I have some small Lervinge) as well to receive the Complayntes which I should deliver agaynst Wyriott, as that which he should exhibite agaynst me; where in troth I never complayned unto my Lords of the Counsell, or to any other Person agaynst hym. Soe that it should appere, (wherof I am sorie to writt) the Intent was to siste me of whatsoever I had don since I was first borne: A Course (as I take it) never used to any Gentleman, or other Person hertofore, or convenient to be don henceforward. And allthough thereby I have received greate Discredit, (and soe
una-

Sir John Perrott, Kt. 125

unable in my Contrey) by the publick Examyninge and Reexamyninge of the Justices in theyr severall Cyrcuites this Sommer, (upon that Letter, and Artickles grounded thereupon) to serve your Majestie as I desired: Yet I am assured, there neither is, hath, or can be proved one whit, that can touch me with disorderly Lewinge here, or doinge Wrong to any particular Person: Protesting unto your Majestie, that by my owne Experience I finde there is not soe great Greif, (that soe neerely toucheth the Mynd of Man,) as to be mistrusted, and thereupon to be generally sifted. And seeing I cannot be proved guyltie of any Crime, and that I remayne here repayring my selfe to serve your Highnes, when and howsoever it shall please you to commaund me; I trust your Majestie will cause it to be examined, wherfore and by whom such unusuall Letters were sent out, with Intent to doe me Harme. And soe with all Humblenes, referring the Consideration of the Premisses to your most gracious Pleasure; I agayne crave Pardon for the Length of this Letter, praying unto God to send your
Ma-

126 *The L I F E of*

*Majestie all abundant Felicitie, longe and
prosperous Raigne over us, and continual
Victory over your Enimies.*

THIS playne Letter Sir *John Perrott* wrote, presenting his Complaynt unto the Queenes Majestie, who accepted it in good Part; and gave Order unto the Erle of *Lecester* that he should make Inquirie touching the Wrongs offered unto Sir *John Perrott*, and that he learning it out, should certifie hir Highnes whoe were the Authors and Workers of the same. Soe that Sir *John Perrott* thought hymselfe reasonable well righted, and his Mynd somewhat eased, when once the Queenes Majestie had receved his Complaynts and promised hym Redresse. But withall he wrote unto the Lords of the Counsell, and to other his honorable Frendes, touching the hard Course used towards hym: And in one of his Letters unto the Lord President of *Wales*, (who sent unto hym to know how he had been handled) he writeth thus:

My

My very good Lord,

I Have receved your Letter of the sixth of this November, whereby I understand the greate Care your Lordshipe hath to know howe Thinges procedeth in Court with me, touching the hard Measure offered unto me this last Somer. For the which I yeld your Lordshipe due Thankes. And allthough I were the Man that was first shott at by such an unwonted and extraordinary Course, yet perhappes there was a Meaninge to reach farther, but God will not permitt the Envious to doe more then he is pleased to suffer. And seeing that I ame knowen above, not to have don any Offence in the Contrey (and thereby tried to br trew Silver by the Touche) since I was first rocked in my Cradell; I have not spared (as farre as became me) to write both unto hir Majestie, and to my Lords of the Counsell, of the Manner of this Misuse, and dangerous new invented Course agaynst me, that allwayes ment hir Highnes and my Contrey all faythfull Service. From the which, whilst I live, there shall noe Whip of Despite drive me. And touching such Letters

128 *The LIFE of*

Letters as I received from my Lord of Leicester, Mr. Secretary Walsingham, and my Sonne, of that Matter; I have sent your Lordships theyr Copies here inclosed, by the which it may appere that hir Majestie is offended with the sower Course used agaynst me, and allso meaneth to wad farther in seeking to understand the Cause, &c.

I am

Yours to command

J. PERROTT.

By which Letters we may behold Sir John Perrott his Innocencie, the Bitternes of his open Enimies, and the Support they received from his secret Adversaries; who yet regarded them not, though they sate in high Places of Authority. And as for Wyriott, (who still persisted in his malicious Purposes) Sir John Perrott caused hym to be arrested upon an Action of the Case, for the Artickles which he had exhibited, and recovered thereupon a 1000 l. Damages;

ges; for which he was committed to Prison in *Harverfordwest*, and there did remaine in Durance, being so willfully bent, that he would never confesse his Faulte, or crave Favour at Sir *John Perrott's* Handes, which if he would have don, he might have byn released; but Sir *John Perrott* percevinge his Obstinacy, suffered hym to be a Punisher of himself, and to pay for that in Body which otherwise he could not satisfie; having sought to take away the good Name and to blemish the Reputation of a Man of his Worth.

WHEN Sir *John Perrott* had thus answered the Clamors of his Adverlaries, to the Increase of his owne Fame and theyr Disgrace; he did continew for a Time in the Contrie, yet not forgetfull of the Common-weale or cares of the publick State: For he both did receive Letters from some grave Counsellors of the State, touching the Occurents of Thinges at that Time; and did give such judiciall Answers touching the same, as were shewed to the Queene, and she liked well therof.

K

Besyds

Besyds such Advertisments as he received from forayne Parties, he did impart usually unto such Persons of the Privy Counsell, as were of best Judgment and Place, the Copie of one Letter written unto Sir John Perrott from a Privy Counsellor, touching Monsieur's coming into England, having reference to a former Letter received from hym concerning the same, was as followeth :

S I R,

IT may be that you have received divers Reportes touching Monsieur's cominge, but the Truth is, that hir Majesty, (at the earnest Request made by his Ministers here) and for that she could not otherwise well be dispatched of hym, but by according an Interview, hath sent hym a Saffe Conductor. And whereas at the first, the Time was agreed on for August, she desired afterwards that it might be deferred unto September, and soe standeth determined. What the Coldnes of the Season may bringe forth, I cannot prognosticat. Your Opinion and Judgmen I perceive by your former, which I acquainted

Sir John Perrott, Kt. 131

quaynted hir Majesty withall, and they were taken in very good Part.

And soe resting alwayes yours, to doe you what Pleasure and Frendship I may, I bid you right hertely farewell. From the Court at Grenewich, the 16th of July, 1579.

Your assured loving Frende,

FRA. WALSINGHAM.

THIS Letter sheweth how willing that grave Counsellor was to advertise Sir *John Perrott* the Truth of what happened in that Matter of soe greate Moment, and what reckning he made of Sir *John Perrott's* Opinion, wherewith he acquainted the Queenes Majesty, who tooke it in good Part (as it should seame). And although Sir *John Perrott* possessed noe Office in the Court at that Time, yet was he made acquaintd with most of the great Affayers and Accidents which happened there in his Absence: Soe lykewise did he playnely write his Opinion touching the same, unto Personnes of greate

K 2

Accompt,

Accompt, and was as carefull of the Commonweale as if he had injoyed a high Place of Authoritie in the State; for when he receved any Advertisments from beyond the Seas, which might any way concerne the State, he did allwayes speedily acquaint some of the Privy Counsell therewith; which may partely appere by one Letter that he sent unto a wise and a grave Counsellor, as it should seame, in answer of a former Letter receved from hym; the Contents wherof were as followeth:

S I R,

MAY it please you to understand, That upon the coming of this Messenger, and (untill that I saw the Letters he brought, was only from you) I was not without Feare, that there had byn intended some bad Journey for me: But upon Perusall I found myselfe bound unto you, that you had my Suite in Remembrance (if time served) but I believe this Age procureth to all Men rather Trouble or Expences, than any Thing due upon Desertes. And seeinge that many deserving better than myselfe, doe mysse that which apperteyneth to them, I will content myselfe

Sir John Perrott, Kt. 133

myselfe with that which is prepared for me by the Director of all Thinges, humbly praying you not to troble yourselfe for my Good, but as Conueniency serveth. In the mean Time, I will enterteyne my gray hayers, which are so thickely come upon my Face within this Yere, as almost I may seame as wise as some of my Contrymen bearing Office there. It is well that Monsieur occupieth hymselfe with seeinge of Soldiers; and it were pitie that he should lacke Money to supplie his greate Charge. Marry, it is to be feared (as it pleased you to touch sumwhat thereof) that the King of Spayne will deale with hym, as the Duke of Alna dealte with the Prince of Orange, whose Recovery I am most glad of, and will pray for his Saffety, he beinge a principall Pillar of the Religion. The Warning given hym may bid hir Majesty (whom God guyd) to take heede of the fatt Bulls of Basan, who seake to incloase hym on every Side. We heare from France, of Preparation of Shippes, and other Forces, made by the French King. If any Stoppe be of a perfect League and suer Amitie between hir Majesty and the French King; under Reformation it were good we

134 *The L I F E of*

looked unto hym what Pretence he hath for Portugal, and thereupon, not to be unmindfull of miserable Ierland. I spake with some, sixe Dayes past, that came from Lisbonne, where the King of Spayne was, who prepareth 150 Sayles of the best Shippes he can provide (as he delivereth it out) to be agaynst Sir Francis Drake's Viage; but soe many Shippes he need not to furnish for that Cause: But when Pretence is made by the Spaniard one way, he can serve an other.

I am

Yours,

P. D.

HEREIN we may perceve Sir *John Perrott's* Care for his Countries Weale, and how willing he was to advertise any Thing that might tend to the Saffetie of the Prince and of the State wherein he lived. And in this Course he continew-ed sometimes in the Court, sometimes in the Countrey, as Occasion served, untill the Yere, at which Time the Queenes Majestie,

Majestie, and hir Privy Counsell, thought it meete to make hym Lord Deputy of *Ierland*, where he was sent, and governed there some Yeres, as the Particulers of his Services will shew; but before Declaration therof be made, it may not be deemed unnecessary or unproper to premise a brieve Discourse of the Envie which attended hym, both before he entred into the Service, and the Prediction, or rather wise Foresight, which a wise and a worthy Knight his half Brother, *Sir Henry Jones*, did seeme to foresee, and shew what Danger *Sir John Perrott* should fall into by that Employment, being Lord Deputy of *Ierland*. So that Enimies and Enviars he he had betimes (especially when he undertooke any greate Enterprise) hath byn partely made knownen by some former Examples) and now agaynst his Entrance into hir especiall Service, the same evill-will of his Adversaries did not cease to shew it selfe; for there were two Gentlemen of that Contry, wherein he dwelt (being both Justices of the Peace, and Men of good Livelyhood) who did accuse *Sir John Perrott* unto the Lords of

the Privy Counsell, That he was an Oppressor of his Neighbours, and a Man of such Power in his Contrie, as no Redresse could be had of the Wrongs, which he did unto divers of his Contreymen. Which grevous Complaynt being made agaynst hym, he was called before the Counsell to answer it, and his Accusers lykewise to approve theyr Accusation.

W H E N they were herde on both Sides, and the Complaynants could not justifie theyr Accusations; it was ordered by the Lords of the Counsell, that they should be both committed to the *Fleet* for slaundering Sir *John Perrott*, and that they should publickly confesse before the Justices of that Cyrquite, wherein they lived. But Sir *John Perrott* having Compassion on one of them, because he was an old Gentleman (called Mr. *Griffith White*) besought theyr Lordships to remitt his Committment, saying, It should be sufficient Satisfaction for hym to have them confesse, that they had wronged hym. This is registred amongst the Orders in the Counsell Table Booke, and remayneth

Sir John Perrott, Kt. 137

remayneth there to be seene. Soe hardly was *Sir John Perrott* besett on all Sides with Calumniations and Clamors of his Adversaries; soe that, wheresoever he went, there wanted not such as would be redie to slander and maligne hym: Which made his halfe Brother, *Sir Henry Jones*, (who is mentioned before) to foresee, and as it were to foretell, what hard Fortunes would befall hym in this Service wherein he was to be employed: For when *Sir John Perrott* was redie to depart for *Ireland*, he sent a Gentleman to recommend his Love, and to bring his Farewell unto *Sir Henry*, who receving the Message (and being both a kinde natured, and a wise Knight) began with Teares to lament the Fortunes, and as it were the Fall of *Sir John Perrott*, saying, Alas! (quoth he) what meant my Brother to undertake this Service? he might have lived at Home as well as any Man of his Sort in this Kingdom, and now he shall be envied more than ever he was. Well, commend me unto hym, and tell hym, I thinke I shall never see hym agayne.

THIS

THIS sad Farewell Sir Henry Jones sent to his Brother Sir John Perrott, who, whether he spake by way of Prediction, or as a prudent Man, judging of Events by Lykelyhoods, we cannot directly determine; for he did feare that Sir John Perrott should finde more and greater Adversaries in this his Government, then he had before; and allso he knew his Nature to be such, that he could not beare the least Crosse at his Adversaries Hands. And surely soe it fell out, that Sir John Perrott, by his sever Government, and by the suppressing of such as he thought did oppress the Subjects in that Kingdom, was mightily maligned, and did procure many evill-willers, not of the meanest Sort; so fell it out trewly in that which Sir Henry Jones sayd, both in this, and that he beleved never to see hym agayn; for Sir Henry died before his Brother's Returne, and in that was the Happier, because he saw not the finall and fatall Unhappines which befell his Brother Sir John Perrott, whom he loved so deerely; but in this he gave Sir John Perrott such a sorrowful Farewell,

Farewell, (goeing to be Lord Deputie) as *Arrius Antonius* did gratulat, or rather bewaile the State of *Cocceius Nero*, when he was chosen Emperor of Rome, and received joyfully of all the Senators into the Court, only *Antonius* his deere Frende, (beinge a wise Man) embrased hym, and expressing the Condition of them that bare greate Rule and Government, sayd, That he did rejoyce at the good Fortune of the Senate, the People, and the Provinces, rather than at his, to whom it had byn more safe to see the Faultes of bad Princes, then sustayninge the Force of soe greate a Burden, to be subject not only to Troubles and Dangers, but to the ill Report and Displeasure as well of his Friendes as his Enimies, who, when they cannot have that they would have (supposing they deserve any Thing) become more fierce then publick, professed Enimies.

The



The S E C O N D B O O K.

SIR *John Perrott*, after he received in 1533 his Commission to be Lord Deputie * of *Ierland*, departed into the Contrie, where he reposed hymselfe for a short Time to settle his State and private Affayers there. And before his Departure, the Erle of *Ormond* coming out of *Ierland*, to travell unto the Court of *England*, landed at *Milford*, where, he meetinge with Sir *John Perrott*, rejoyced much at his goeing to be Lord Deputie, remayned with hym at the Castell of *Carew*, duringe his aboad there, and so returned back with Sir *John Perrott* to *Ierland*, geving over his goinge to the Court for that Time, and reposinge soe much in Sir *John Perrott*'s Indifferencie, that the Erle thought hymselfe secuer, and that he needed not

* See Appendix of Original Papers, *Number I. II.* at the End of this Work.

Sir John Perrott, Kt. 141

trie his Frendes at Court duringe Sir *John Perrott's* Governement. Soe Sir *Perrott*, after some small Staie in the Contrie, tooke Shipping at *Milford Haven*, and sayled for *Ireland*, where he arrived at *Dublyn* in *January 1583*. Within a Sevenight after his coming thither, he tooke the Sword, and so presently fate in Counselle to settell good Courfes for the quieting and good Government of that State, being a Contrie that had byn longe infested with Warres, Bloodshed, Sedition, and civill Contention; soe that for the Space of sixtie Yeres or upwardes, seldom had there byn any Continuance of Concord and perfecte Peace thorow all the Partes of that Island, but that either thorow the Corruption or Ignorance of the Governors, the Contention of the Lords and Men of Accompt amongst themselves, or the Disobedience of the People, and theyr principal Leaders agaynst the Prince and Magistrate, the Sword was more in Use amongst them then the Lawes, and Revenge was more practised then Peace.

THE

THE Corruption of the Governors; either by Covetuousnes or Partialitie, had divers Times occasioned greate Tumultes and Trobles in that Land, but never more then in the former and last Warres of *Ierland*, which did grow partely by the Avarice, Instigation, and Procurement of some late Governors, whose Names shall be silenced, because they are deceased, (for of the dead we are willed to speake but only the best) and this last Warre did exhaust more Treasure from the Crowne of *England*, spent more *English* Blood, and the Lives of more worthie Men, then all the Warres within that Contrie had consumed for two Hundred Yeres before. The Ignorance of the Governors had also sometimes given greate Advantage to the ill-affected Subjectes, who being lyke to Coltes not well ridden, when they finde the Rider not to carrie a straight, even Hand, and a furer Seate, will strive to take the Head, and runne away with theyr Rider, or to cast hym out of his Seate, if they can. Such is the Nature of that People (and
of

Sir John Perrott, Kt. 143

of most others, which are conquered, and constrayned to obey) to seeke Libertie, and to preferre auncient Costomes before new Ordinances, be they never soe good. Yet to say the Truth, the People of that Contrie love to be justly dealt withall by theyr Governors, howsoever they deale with one another, and will doe more at the Command of theyr Governor, whom they repute and have found to be juste, then by the stricte Execution of the Lawes, or Constraynt of any Force or Power: Allso they are for the most parte naturally wise, and apte to observe the best Advantage and Opportunitie to obteyne theyr Porposes. All which *Sir John Perrott*, the now Lord Deputie, knowinge, partely by his former Experience, when he was President of *Mounster*, and by the Depth of his Judgment, did now devise and determyne wholly to follow such Course as might reduce them to a perfect Obedience, and settell an undoubted Peace in that Kingdom. Therefore he determyned immediatly to travell thorow the severall Provinces of *Ierland* in Person, perswading hymselfe,

144 *The LIFE of*

hymselfe, that it would be the best Evidence unto his Knowledge to become an Eie Witnes of the particuler State of Things, as well to heare the Complayntes of distressed Persons, as to compound the Controversies which grow betwixt Men of all Qualities. To this Porpose he first taketh his Journey into *Conaught*, there to place Sir *Richard Bingham* in his Government, and to take order for the Settlement of that Province in Peace, which the Lord Deputie performed within a few Monethes after he receved the Sword. And soe from *Conaught* he travelled to wards the Province of *Mounster*, intendinge to take suitable Courses thorowout all the Provinces of *Ierland*; but when the Lord Deputie came to *Lymricke*, there the Lord Deputie receved Advertisements of a greate Number of Islanders or *Scotish Irish*, discovered and redie to land in *Ulster*, or in some Part of the North, beinge by Estimation above Fifteen hundred, transported in Twenty two Galeyes, and drawen over by oneley *Boyes*, and his Confederates. Hereof Intelligence was given to the Lord Deputie by divers Persons, namely,

ly, from the Maior of *Waterford*, who informed what Shippes were seene here the Coste ; also Captayn *Mynro* made Report of theyr Landinge at *Mayney* in *O-Neale's* Contrie. Besydes the lyke Advertisment recev'd from the Baron of *Donaganon*, and from the Provost Marshal ; but especially the Practise and Plott of that Attempt was discovered by the Archbuyshop of *Cashilles*, who sent unto Sir *Lucas Dyllon*, who did impart unto the Lord Deputie certayn Letters, which *Torlough Lenough* wrot unto the Archbuyshop of *Cashill*, to this Effect :

THAT *Torlough* challenged the Buyshop to be his Follower borne, and therfor to be trusted, and that he should finde *Ulster* his Refuge, when all other Partes fayled ; and finally, that he should credite the Messinger. After *this the Buyshop being sent for, came unto the Deputie to Dublyn*, where he declared that he found the Messinger was appoynted to practise with all the Lords and *Irish* Captaynes of *Monster* and *Conaught*, to enter into Rebellion whensoever Strangers should arive.

L

Then

Then the Archbuyshop was directed by the Lord Deputie to interteyne the Messinger, and to send one of his owne with hym, as well in the Jorney into *Mounster* and *Conaught*, as in his Return to *Ulster*, to the Ende he might be apprehended in his Returne; for which Porpose the Lord Deputie wrote to fowre severall Constables of the Queenes Howses (by one of which he must needes come) and soe accordingly he was apprehended in *Athlone*, where the Lord Deputy, and some of the Counsell, tooke his Examination. He confessed after greate Threatninges of Torture, that he was no common Messinger, but one of great Account with *O-Neale* his Fosterer, and a Leader of xl Horsemen, and had under hym 2000 Kine; that he was sent to deale with the Erle of *Clancarty*, the Lord *Fitz Moris*, and all others of any Account in *Mounster* and *Conaught*, to requier them to joyne with his Master, agaynst the Queenes Majestie, and to asfuer them, that Troopes under the Kinge of *Spayne* (with other forayn Ayde) would enter the Relme with such Force, that before *Michaelmas* there should not be one
English

English Man leste (or any that loved the Queene of *England*) to be found in *Ireland*, notwithstanding any Fastnes within the Land, and that this should have byn done in May last, if all Things had byn redie for it.

HE sayd that he spake with none but with *Fitz Moris*, with whom he brake the Matter, whose Answer was, That synce the Deputie was now arrived (whom all that Province knew) they would doe nothing, but as he would have them, soe long as he and the Erle of *Ormond* did tary in the Land, and therfor willed hym to returne to his Master.

HE sayd, that his Master was promised to be made Kinge of *Ierland*, and that he accepted of it; saying he would be Kinge, allthoe he died within one Hower after.

BEING demanded of the Cause why his Master would rebell, considering he had all that he required of the Queene? He sayd that the Realme was carelesly leste without Force, and noe Man of Warre to govern it; therfor they thought it best

not to lose soe good an Occasion, especially when they were offered soe greate Aide from forayne Partes.

THIS Confession beinge gott from the Spiall, he was then committed to close Prison, where he remayned, and *Torlough Lenough* knew not therof, or any besyds the Lord Deputie and the Counsell, and by this with the other Advertisments, the whole Combination and Conspiracy was discovered; soe that the Lord Deputie, to prevent soe imminent a Perill, was forced to returne to *Dublyn*, to make speedie Preparation for Resistance, and did surcease his intended Journey for that Time, to travell thorow the other Partes and Provinces of *Ierland*, whereby he thought and began to settell a good Course for planting of Peace thorowout the Realme, which suerly he would have performed, if he had not byn interrupted by this unexpected Accident of the sodayn landing of the Islanders in greater Number, and better furnished than had byn before that Time accustomed, although they had made often Incurfions into *Ierland* before that

Sir John Perrott, Kt. 149

Time ; for before they coming, the Lord Deputie had passed thorow *Conaught*, in which Journey he dealt with the *O-Kellys*, *O-Conor Roe*, *O-Coner Done*, *O-Coner Slygo*, *Mac Willin Onger*, *Morothe*, *Done Affluerty*, the *O-Neales*, the *Burkes* of *Enter Conaught*, the *Mac Dony Mahone*, *Mac Enaspik*, the Erle of *Thomond*, the Erle of *Clanrickard*, the Lord *Bremingham*, both the *Mac Nemaraes*, the two *Mac Mahons*, and every other Lord of *Conaught* and *Thomond*. All which the Lord Deputie pacified and quieted for Wrongs past, tooke Pledges for Assurance of theyr Loyalties, and for Performance of theyr Compositions ; and finally, he executed that most notable Traytor *Connough Beg Obrian*, and six of his Followers, and decided all Controversies by Aide of the Counsell, in the whole Tract of his Journey thorow *Conaught* and *Thomond*, whereby the People seemed to be very well satisfied and settled to Peace. But with nothing more were they better pleased, than with the Correction of the Sheriffes, and limiting them with what Companies they should travell.

LASTLY, The suspected Buyshop, *Malachias Annalone*, and a Friar, being Brother to *Mac Wellin Enghter*, did renounce the Pope, sware to the Supremacie, and the Friar gave over his Habit presently, both publish'd a Profession of theyr Fayth and Recantation. The Lord Deputie also increased the Schole-masters Fee at *Galloway*, without the Queenes Charge, and entered into some Reformation of Religion, which he proposed should be better provided for by Parliament.

AT the Lord Deputies cominge to *Lymbricke*, there met hym the Lord President: the Erle of *Ormond*, before his coming there, repayred unto hym into *Conaught*, the Erle of *Mounster*, and the Erle of *Mac Moris*, *Osewlinan More*, the Knight of *Perrey*, and certayn Septes of the *Galoglasse*; and after at *Lymrick*, all the rest of the cheif Persons in that Province, presented themselves unto the Lord Deputie, saving such as did accompany Sir *William Stanley*, then Sheriffe of the

the Countie of *Corke*, with whom was the Lord *Bary*, the Lord *Roch*, and Sir *Owen Mac Cartie*, thinckinge to meete the Lord Deputie in the Entry of that Countie ; but the Newes cominge to hym at *Lymrick*, of the Arival of the *Islanders*, and the Shipping which was seene upon the Coste, the Lord Deputie was thereby diverted from proceeding in his purposed Journey, and soe commanding the suspected Men of that Province to attend hym in his Northern Journey, and to follow the Lord President and the Erle of *Ormond*, who both were appoynted to accompany the Lord Deputie. He ordered the Countie of *Corke* to be governed by the Justices, *Waltho Meath* by the Sherife, and by *Barrey of Roch*, the Countie of *Lymbryck*, by the Provost Marshial, the Countie of *Kerrie* by the Sheriff, and *Fitz Moris*, and others, whose Pledges the Lord Deputy tooke. The Countie of *Desmond* he committed to be governed by the Erle of *Clancarty*, Sir *Owen Osewilinan*, *Oswilinan More* ; the Shire of *Tipperary* to be ruled by the Erle of *Ormondes* Officers, and the whole Province generallie under the Justices,

stices, and certayne other Commissioners.

BEFORE the Deputies Departure from thence, he took Pledges of *Franch Mac Hugh*, who came and delivered his Unckle and his Sonne for Hostages. The *O-Brians* delivered theyr Pledges to Sir *Henry Harrington*.

THE *O-Coners* (both Brethren) submitted themselves, and put away theyr idle Men, reducing themselves to a very small Number. The *O-Mores*, after the Death of their principal Leader, *James More*, alias *Meagh*, were divided into two or three Sceptes, and Pledges taken of them. The *Canenaughes* havinge not, at the Deputies coming away, delivered theyr Pledges, were referred to Sir *Nicholas White*, and certayne other Commissioners in the Association. Sir *Henry Wallope* for the Survey of, and View of the Portes of *Maribrow* and *Philipston*.

FINALLY,

FINALLY, He divided the Liffenancy of the Fortes, *Philipston* and *Kinges Countie*, to Sir *George Boucher*, Knight, and the *Queenes Countie*, to *Warham Saint Leger*. The *O-Kellies*, as well Sir *John*, as *Edmond* and *Philip*, repayed unto the Lord Deputie at *Dublyn*, and submitted themselves to his Order concerning theyr Controversys.

WHEN the Lord Deputie had taken this Care and Order, as well to receve suer Pledges for the Loyaltie of the Lordes, as for the placinge of sufficient Men to command in his Absence thorow all the Western Partes of *Ierland*, as hath byn sett downe, and as it was certified unto the Lords of the Privey Counsell of *England*, in this Sorte, under the Handes of the Lord Deputie, Sir *John Norryes*, Lord President of *Mounster*, Sir *Lucas Dillon*, Knight, Sir *Edward Waterhouse* and Sir *Jeffery Fenton*. Then the Lord Deputie having layed this Guard behynd his Backe, to maynteyne the Contrie in Quiet in his Absence, prepared speedily, with convenient Power,

154 *The L I F E of*

Power, to goe into the North, and to encounter with all the Forayne Forces there landed, and with theyr Adherents the Traytors; and soe presently he sett forwards in his Journey, with such Forces as he could make, about the fifteenth Day of *August* 1584, taking his Journey towards the *Newry*, when the Islanders hearing of the Deputies Determynation to stop them and theyr Galleys in *Loughfoyle*, with certayn Shippes, and to pursue them with all the Sharpenes he could possibly; allso understanding how well affected all the Subjectes of *Leynster*, *Mounster*, and *Conaught* were, and how redie (contrary to theyr Expectations) to serve with the Lord Deputy agaynst them, they for the most part fled before the Lord Deputie could come to the *Newry*: The Lord Deputy imputed theyr Escape unto some Negligence in the Shipping (though they did excuse it by a Leake) for the Galleyes got out of the River but one Hower before the Shipping came thither, else they had byn taken; and the Shipping had them in Chase, but did them little Hurte.

W H E N

WHEN the Lord Deputie came unto the *Newry*, *Orleg Lenough* met hym halfe a Mile from the *Newry*, havinge neither Protection nor Pardon, and there the Lord Deputy received his Pledges, he yeldinge hymselfe in all Thinges conformable and dutifull, as he was required. Thence forwards (as the Lord Deputy wrote) the better he became, the weaker he waxed, and the lesse regarded of his Followers, soe that the Lord Deputy was driven to assist hym agaynst them, and to make them depend on hym, that thereby the Lord Deputy might the better lay upon them and hym such Impositions as he had determynd for the Queenes Service. Which Example of *Turlough's* Weaknes, and want of Followers, (after his Submission to become a good Subject) is an Argument, amongst many other lyke Instances, of the common and greater Sorte of People's ill Disposition in that Contry, who are usually more redie to follow a meane Man in any tumultuous or seditious Action, than the same Man, or one much better than he, when he shall become a
good

156 *The LIFE of*

good and a peaceable Subject; soe that it hath been often seene, that he which had a Thousand Followers in a Rebellion, could not carrie after hym one Hundred Men afterwards to serve agaynst a Rebell for his Prince.

WHILST the Lord Deputy staid at the *Newry*, there came unto hym, upon his Letters of Commandment, without Protection or Pardon, Sir *Hugh Mogenye*, *Mac Mahon*, *O-Hanlan*, *Turlough Brastlaugh*, and the Captaynes of the *Fewes*, *Ferney*, *Carty*, *Kylwarlen*, *Kylultagh*, and all those of *Clandaboy's* Syde, with whom the Lord Deputy tooke Order to assuer the Borders, having appoynted upon his Returne, to receve theyr Pledges: And sith the Lord Deputy was come soe farre, and soe well provided, he thought it not meete to returne backe all his Preparations fruitles, without any Good done to requite some Part of the Charge. And therfor understanding that *Sorleboy* had interteyned a Number of *Islanders*, and joined unto hym *Okeham*, and *Brian Carraugh*; and that he stood upon Termes, to hold
by

Sir John Perrott, Kt. 157

by Force what he had gotten by the same (which was the Rout, and part of the *Clyves*, *Mac Gwylin*, and other hir Majesties Subjectes Lands,) the Lord Deputy thought it a great Dishonor to hir Majestie, and found it would be a great Lett to his Determynations, to suffer hym proudly to Countenance the Invasion of Forayners to eate out hir Majesties natural Subjectes.

WHERUPON the Lord Deputy entered into Action agaynst *Sorleboy*, with his Adherents, and devided his Army into two Partes, to follow hym on both Sides of the River, called the *Band*. The Lord Deputy, accompanied with the Erles of *Ormond* and *Thomond*, *Sir Lucas Dillon*, *Sir Edward Waterhouse*, and Secretary *Fenton*, the Lord Deputy hymselfe, went with the chiefe Men, and halfe the Forces kept on *Clandaboy* Side. He then sent *Sir John Norreys*, Lord President of *Mounster*, accompanied with the Baron of *Dongannon*, to *Tyrone* Syde, with the other part of the Armey. The Lord Deputy on the one Side spoyled *Brian Caraughs* Contry,

158 *The L I F E of*

Contry hymself, and *Sorleboy* being fled over the *Ban*, to the Fastnes of *Cloncomkine*, with all theyr Forces and Creatures, Sir *John Norreys* on the other Syde, overslypping *Sorleboy*, fell upon *O-Chan*, and tooke from hym Two Hundred Cowes (which gave the Armie some Reliefe) though many of them were imbeaselled in the drivinge. Wherupon *O-Chan*, submitting hymselfe, came in and made offer to serve upon *Sorleboy*, and *Brian Caraugh* made Meanes for Mercie.

BECAUSE *Sorleyboy* shonned the Lord Deputy's Side, trusting to his Fastnes on the other Syde, and that he was loath to overslyp any Time or Advantage agaynst the Rebells, he sent over to the Lord President some of his Horsemen, and a good Part of his Footmen, with most of his Kerne, hoping that dividing his Companys as he directed, according to good Spialls, some Good might be done upon hym on that Side.

THE Lord Deputy, with the rest of his Company, incamped before *Dunluse*,
and

Sir John Perrott, Kt. 159

and besieged it, being one of the strongest Peeces within the Realme of *Ireland*, for it is scituate upon a Rock, hanging over the Sea, divided from the Mayne, with a deepe Rock Ditch, natural and not artificiall, and havinge noe Way to it but a small Necke of the same Rocke, which is allso cut off very deepe. It had in it then a stronge Ward, wherof the Captayn was a *Scotishman*, who when the Deputy sent to hym to yeld, he refused Parley, and answered (speaking very good *English*) That they would keepe it to the last Man, which made the Deputy draw neere thither, and planted a Battery of Culverines, and ij Cannon, before it, which being brought by Sea to *Skirries Port Russh*, the Lord Deputie caused to be drawn thither, being (two Myles off from *Dunluse*) by Force of Men, wherin he spared not the Labor of his owne Servants; and when small Shott played soe thicke out of the Fort, that the common Soldiers began to shrink in plantinge of the Artillery, the Lord Deputy made his owne Men fill the Gabions with Earth, and make good the Ground, untill the Ordinance was

was planted, and the Trenches made: This being don, the Lord Deputie hymselfe gave Fire to the first Peece of Ordinance, and discharged it, which did noe great Hurt; but shortly after, it being better fhaked, the next Morninge (after that they had over Night felte a little the Force of the Battery) they sent unto the Lord Deputy to be receved unto Mercie, wherunto he condescended the rather, because he would save the Charges of Repayring agayn that Peece, which otherwise he must have beaten downe; and for that he would not spend the Provision, weaken the Forces, and hinder the rest of the Services then intended, by lyinge longe before one Forte, and therfor he graunted them Life and Liberty to depart. After the taking of *Dunluse*, the Lord Deputy allso took in *Donferte*, the Ward being fled, lykewise another Pile by *Port-raske*, and all *Sorleboye's* Islands and *Longhs*; soe that he had not a Hole lefte in the mayn Land to creepe into, except the Woods, the Ranghlyns being his cheife Refuge, which was the accustomed Landing Place of the *Islanders*, where they might

might stay to resolve upon theyr Attempes, and make Provision for the Execution of the same.

As the Deputies Campe remayned before *Donluse*, there came unto hym Sir *Owen Oyle* and *O-Donell*, and there the Lord Deputy, having *Turlough O-Neale* with hym, caused them orderly and dutifully to implead each other by Byll, Answer, and Replication, submitting themselves and theyr Controversies to the Lord Deputy and the Counsell's Order. After he had decided theyr Contentions, and mad them sweare first theyr due Allegiance to hir Majestie, and then theyr Mayntenance of the Peace, and the Assistance of ech other agaynst all Traytors, and other hir Majesties Enimies, the Lord Deputy drew them farther, and won them to conditionall Composition to find hir Majestie Five Hundred Men in Garison, as hir Majestie would contribute for theyr better fynding 250 *l.* to every Hundred Men, towards theyr Bread and Drinke by the Yere. The Rate was thus, That *O-Neale* for hymselfe, and those that were

M under

under hym, should finde Three Hundred Men. The lyke Composition he mad there allso with *Magwily* for a Hundred Footmen, and Twenty Five Horsemen.

WHEN the Lord Deputy had finished theise Services at *Dunluse*, he determined to passe farther into the *Kawlinges*, to dispossesse *Sorleboy* of that Refuge allso, but he was inforced to leave the Attempt, partly by a very vehement Storme that arose sodaynly and dangerously, and cheifely for two Doubtes he was constrained to hasten homewards, the one of the Waters, which at the Season of the Yere would, upon small Rayne, rise so high in those Partes, that it would stopp theyr Passage, and returne for want of Bridges. The other was the Scarcitie of Victualls, wherof then they had greate Want, the Winde not servinge to bringe any Bread or Drinke.

BEFORE the Lord Deputy lefte those Partes, *Donell Corme*, the Lady *Cambeel*, and *O-Neale's* Wiffe's Sonne, came unto hym, and upon theyr Submission renouncinge

Sir John Perrott, Kt. 163

nouncing the Obedience of all Forayne Powers and Potentates, he received them to hir Majesties Mercie, mad hym a Denizen, and passed unto hym the Benefitt of the Queenes Graunt, procured by his Mother, for soe much of the *Glynes* as was *Maffett's* Lands, he both paying therfor yerely Sixty Beifes, and finding, upon his owne Charges, Eighty Men to serve in any Part of *Ulster*, at the Governor's Call and Command.

THESE Things thus established, and Garisons planted, viz. Two Hundred Footemen, wherof One Hundred found by *Magwylly*, and Seventy Horsemen at *Colerane*, under Captayn *Carelile*, and Two Hundred Footemen, beinge of the olde Bandes, and Fifty Horsemen, wherof Twenty Five were erected at *Kock-ferrys*, under Sir *Henry Bagnall*, whom the Lord Deputy made Collonell of the Forces there, he tooke his Way thorow the Woods of *Kylultage* and *Kylwaren*, and soe returned to the *Nowrey* the 28th of *September*, where he remayned ten Dayes to perfect this Service.

At the *Norwrey* there came unto the Lord Deputie, *Turlough O-Neale*, bringing with hym, as the Lord Deputy had appoynted, *Henry O-Neale*, *Shane O-Neale's* Sonne, that escaped from *Sir Henry Sidney*; and to that Place there came also unto the Lord Deputy, all the rest of the Lords of *Ulster*, as *Sir Hugh Magenys*, *Con Mac Neale Oge*, *Hugh Oge*, *Shan Mac Brian*, *Mac Mabon*, *Tirlaugh Braselaugh*, *Cartan*, *Ohanlan*, the Captaynes of *Ferney*, *Fens*, *Danghatry*, *Kylultagh*, and *Kylwarren*. They all upon theyr Knees sware Fealty unto the Queenes Majestie, protestinge to serve hir Highnes agaynst all Men. They delivered in such Pledges as the Lord Deputy demanded, and made lyke Composition for fynding of Soldiers, and upon the lyke Condition as *O-Neale*, *O-Donell*, and *Magroyly* had don, every one for the Numbers insuing; *Hugh Oge* and *Shane Mac Brian*, for the neather *Clanda-boy* Eighty Men. *Sir Magenes* for *Huaugh* Forty Men; the Captayn of *Kylultagh* Fifteen; Captayn of *Kylwarlen* Ten *Mac Carten* Ten; the Baron of *Donganon*,
Forney,

Sir John Perrott, Kt. 165

Forney, Mac Mahon, Forwes, Dangutry, and O-Harilan two Hundred. In all which *O-Neale's, O-Donell's, and Mac Wyllie's* amounteth unto Four Hundred *English*; besyds Thirty to be maynteyned after the *Irish* Manner, by *Donell Corme*.

THE Lord Deputie having made theise Compositions, and taken Pledges, perceved some Hertburninges and Questions for Government amongst them, but especially betwixt *Turlough O-Neale*, the Baron of *Dunganon*, and the Marshall. He first reconfiled all Unkindnes between them, and then thought good to divide the greater Governments into smaller, that none should be too stronge, which was ordered in Sorte following:

Con Mac Oge aspired to the whole Government of *Clandeboy* by the olde bad Coustom of *Caunisbe*. *Shane Mac Brian*, and *Hugh Oge*, they stood for the Neether *Clandaboy*, and yet could not agree amongst themselves for theyr Porcions. But the Lord Deputy concluded with theyr owne Consentes, that *Con* should con-

tent hymselfe with the Upper *Clandaboy*, and *Shane* and *Hugh* with the Neether, to be divided and bounded between them; by his Assignation, and by such Commissioners as he had authorised. Besydes he devided all *Ulster*, (except *O-Donell's* Contrie) into three Livetenances, with a Consideration to extinguish *O-Donell's* Clayme to the *Uriaghs*; and to that Ende did assigne unto *Turlough Lenough*, one of the three Liffenants, of soe much as was allredy under his Rule. The Residue he devided betwen the Baron and the Marshall.

W H E R I N the Lord Deputy did imploy his best Indevors, hopinge it would succed well, if the Oportunitie were taken hold of, and the Iron stroken whilst it was hott; and as he hymselfe wrot unto the Lords of the Privey-Counsel in *England* (resytinge by severall Letters, the Particulers of theise Services as they are here sett downe, and were justified allso by the Handes of Sir *John Norris*, Sir *Lucas Dyllon*, Sir *Edward Waterhouse*, and Secretary *Fenton*, who were in the Northern

Sir John Perrott, Kt. 167

thern Journey; in one of which Letters the Lord Deputie hath theise Wordes:

YOUR Lordshippes may see, I have not byn idle, (having notwithstanding the very bad Weather that hath byn here) gon thorow all the fine Provinces of the Realme, within lesse then a Quarter of a Yere; soe may your Lordshippes allso perceve what Care I have taken to incounter theise Accidents that at the first seemed dangerous, and soe would have proved if they had byn but a While suffered.

THIS Letter beareth Date from the Camp at *Dunluse*, the 15th of September 1584, and the same with the rest of the Lord Deputie's Advertisments (conteyning the Particulers of his Services promised) were confirmed by Letters from such of the Privey-Counsell in *Ireland*, as were Witnesses to the same, in this Sorte by them signified.

M 4

MAY

MAY it please your Lordshippes, the the Lord Deputy hath made us acquainted with his Letters of Advertisements, which he hath sent unto your Lordships; and for that we have attended on his Lordship all this Forney in Ulster, wherein we have seene from one Action to another, with what Sincerity he hath labored to prevent hereafter the chiefe Groundes and Occasions of theise Disturbances in the Province. We are bound in this joynt Manner to concurre with his Lordship touching the Contentes of the sayd Advertisements, which we affirme to be true in all Poyntes, (all Thinges seene by us, and passing thorow our Knowledge) humbly desiring your Lordshippes this Time to dispence with us for not writing more severally and particulerly. And soe humbly taking our Leave for this Time, pray God allwayes to blesse and preserve your Lordshippes. At the Campe nere Dunluse, xixth of September 1584.

Your Lорshippes humbly to command,

John Norris, Lucas Dillon,

Ed. Waterhouse, Jeffery Fenton.

W H E N

WHEN the Lord Deputy was returned to *Dublyn*, from *Ulster*, he wrote particularly unto the Lords off the Privy Counsell in *England*, of theise Services, but specially of the Composition yielded to by the Lords of *Ulster*, for the Mayntenance of Six Hundred Soldiers, and of a new Project which he propounded, for the more stable settling and continuing of that State in Quietnes; the Contents wherof were as followeth:

WHEREAS before I wrote for Five-Hundred Men, I pray your Lordshipper here may be sent Six Hundred, to be levied Twenty Five in a Shier, in the hardest Contrie, and of the best and ablest Personages in *England* and *Wales*, to be sorted in Weapons, as other Bander ordinarily are (excepting One Hundred and Fifty amongst the whole, to be good Bowmen, because I would make some Proffe of them): And I would have Four Hundred of them be landed here, and Two Hundred at *Waterford*. I meane to imploy them all in this Garrison of One Thousand One Hundred, mixinge them
with

with the olde Bandes, and to be maynteyned chiefly upon Ulster. But because, as your Lordshippes may perceve a greate Part of theyr Pay resteth upon Butter and Oatmeale, which with the reste of theyr Allowances by the Irish, will yet yelde a reasonable Good, recevinge about One Thousand Two Hundred Pound Sterling a Bande by the Yere: I doe on the Services Behalfe, requier the Addition of the Two Hundred and Fifty a Yere for every Two Hundred Men by hir Majesties Condition before-mentioned. And then I nothing doubt to make, not only hereby to keepe that Contrie of Ulster in good Obedience, but allso to make those Companies a Fall to forrayne Invaders, and serviceable to hir Majestie, in any Place where Occasion shall be to use them: I thinck the lyke Improvement of Rent hath not byn in our Age; for when nothing was wont to be had, but allways Damage and Occasion of greate Charge (as by the Accompt will appere.) Now with this finall Addition of Two Thousand Seven Hundred and Fifty Pound, hir Majestie shall have an Interest either in One Thousand One Hundred trayned Soldiers, to answer all Eventes
(or

Sir John Perrott, Kt. 171

(or else the Interteynment answerable unto them, which amounteth to above Thirteen Thousand Pound a Yere, the most Part wherof in Time may be converted unto hir Majesties Cofers.) And besydes, that Province shall be quit of the Scotts continual Invasion, which hitherto hath bred, not only yerely Charges to hir Majestie (a greate deale above the Two Thousand Seven Hundred and Fifty Pound now depending, demanded) in maynteyning of Bandes of Horsemen and Footemen at the Newrey, and Knockfergus (besydes other greate, extraordinary Charges that often happen upon Occasion) but allso Troble and Daunger to that Province, and to all this Realme, and especially to the Pale.

THE People are now pliant, grow in Hate of the Scotts, (soe as they may be defended, desier to hold theyr Landes by Tenure from hir Majestie, to have theyr Countreies divided into Shier Grounde, and accordingly to live under peaceable Government. This Desier, I doubt not, will hold the same by this Composition wherewith, upon Allowance of that Two Hundred and Fifty

to

172 *The LIFE of*

to each Band I will goe forwards, and doubt not to make it stand as beneficiall to hir Majestie, and as serviceable to this State as is before sett downe.

BESYDES the Good of Ulster, I may not leave to impart to your Lordshyps, what a President I am, in hope it will prove for the rest of this Realme, out of the which the lyke composition (I trust) may be drawen in time; whereby hir Majestie (with much lesse Charges than hertofore hath ben bestowed) may have a trayned Garrison of neere Two thousand Footemen and Four hundred Horsemen: The matter wherupon I ground this hope is the present Peace and Tranquillity of this Realme, and theyr Redines lykewise to any Impression, the rather uppon the successe of this Service.

But for the more stable setting and continuing of the Good of this State, Let me, I humbly pray your Lordships, crave Pardon to make a Motion, which, in my Opinion, being well advised on, will be the best Purchase that England hath mad this many day: I suppose

Sir John Perrott, Kt. 173

pose (if all be trewe that I have herde) hir Majestie hath commonly byn charged with betwen Thirty and Forty Thousand Pounds a Yere, and (if a medium of hir Highnes whole Expences were cast) I thinke not so little as one Yere with another as fifty or sixty Thousand Pounds. If your Lordships can procure hir Majestie to let me have (or such as shall be thought fit to succeed me) for three Yeres together the Summe of Fifty thousand Pounds yerely out of England over and above the same Revenew of this Land: I do trust with God's Favour at the three Yeres ende (excepting only that there be no Impeachment by the Descent of the Spaniardes, and such lyke foreign Enemies) to leave hir Highnes such a trayned Garrison of 2000 Footemen and 400 Horsemen as hertofore I wrote of; and both they and the Government may be discharged with a small Charge out of England. And besides to leave hir Highnes more than allredie she hath in this Realme, seven walled Townes; every Towne a Myle about; seven Bridges and seven Castells.

BY

BY theise the whole Realme may be invironed and strentened, and all greate Matters made passable (if this might be brought to passe); wherein the Opinion that I finde is conceived of me agaynst this People (and that I likewise conceive of them) maketh me the more confident, and I hope small Persuasions will make both the Necessity and the Commodity therof appere, soe as I humbly leave my Imagination to be considered, allowed, or rejected by your Wisedomes. And in the Conclusion,

I pray your Lordshipes, though this Letter may seame longe, yet not to throw it by, but to consider of the Mocions therein, which are, as it were, a Tie of the whole Government; and accordingly to returne an Answer with Speed convenient. Soe I humbly ende from the Castell at Dublyn the second Day of October, 1584.

At this time the Lord Deputy (being returned to Dublyn) brought Turlough O-Neale's Sonne with hym, and because his Father should neede hym (being become

Sir John Perrott, Kt. 175

a good Subject in all Appearance) he ment shortly to returne hym back agayn upon the Receipt of Four principall Pledges, Men that the Lord Deputie had appoynted to be sent unto hym. Which should be suer Pledges both for hir Majestie upon *O-Neale*, and from hym upon his Followers, wherof the Lord Deputy wrote also unto the Lords of the Privy Counsell in *England*. At that time also *Shan O-Neale's* Sonne, which came over with the *Scotts*, mad suite to be receved to Grace, and because they had lately taken one Mr. *Lambert*, an *English* Gentleman, the Lord Deputy did the rather incline to harken unto them for this Gentleman's Good, and so lefte Order with Mr. *Marshall* for the fame.

ALSO about the same time the Lord Deputy mad certayn Mocions unto the Lords of the Privy Counsell in *England*, which he thought not meete, being private Matters, to intermixe with the publick Service, yet were they of good Consequences, and worthy the Consideration.

THE

THE First was a Mocion made by the Lord Deputy hymselfe before his coming into *Ierland*; to send thither Mr. *Shettleworth* to be not only Chiefe Justice of hir Majestie's Bench there, but also an Overseer of the rest of the Courtes to bring them into better Order; becaule he found want of such a One: For besyds that the Execution of Law was out of course there (needing a stout and a learned Man to reduce it into a right Forme) divers of the Judges, Lawiers and Officers were corrupt, especially in Religion, (wherof he gave some Instances,) caried away in Affection of Contrey and Kindred. Which mad them that either they could not, or would not proceed forthright and uprightly in Cases of Justice. And farther, the Lord Deputy affirmed that he must confesse good these Lawiers that were there of hir Majestie's Privy Counsell; yet he should be better satisfied from the Mouth of one that he knew to be profound, and also free from all Partiallities; when any Matter fell out in Counsell, or otherwise, where

where Question of Law might grow, and therefore he prayed, that Mr. *Shettlesworth*, or one of such Sufficiency as he was, might be sent over.

THE second Motion was, that where the corrupt Costome of Taniste and Captence was the Roote of all the Barbarisme and Disorder in *Ireland*, if the same were converted to State of Inheritance, Men would more willingly buyld, plant, and preserve for their Posterity; wheras no Man careth but for his owne time, and thereafter spendeth and spoileth first his own, and then his Neighbours. This People being brought to see theyr owne Error, did desier more dayly to hold theyr Lands by *English* Tenure, offering to make Surrenders, but the Lord Deputy did not accept the same (as he affirmed) because he had noe perfect Warrant to make them any Estates back agayne. Therefore he besought the Lords of the Privey Counsell to procure from hir Majestie such a Warrant (wherof there had byn a former President) that thereby hir Majestie's Profit together with

N

the

the Good of the State might grow in time by theise Tenures.

THE third Matter by the Lord Deputie moved to the Lords of the Privy Counsell, was in the Behalf of Sir Richard Bingam, Governor of Conaught, who (as the Lord Deputie's Wordes were) tooke so streight a Course of Government, as those under hym were reteyned in Dutie with good Contentation; for as he bridled theyr Licencioufnes, soe he gave them noe cause of Offence, by admitting in hymselfe, or any of his, any thinge, which may geive them any Opinion that he respecteth his owne thrifte, but theyr well doeing. Soe that if he were not relieved otherwise then by Fines, which, as the Lord Deputy herde, were not great as he handled the matter (cessing them for the Necessity of the Service, and not for any Lucre) he was not lyke to answer his Charge with his Interteynment by a great deale. Therfor the Lord Deputy did desier theyr Lordshippes to procure an increase of an 100 *l. per Annum* more for hym, which he protested he did
not

Sir John Perrott, Kt. 179

not request either at the seeking of Sir *Richard Bingham*, or with his Knowledg, but only moved with the good Desertes of the Man, and seeing the need he had of some Supplie.

THE fourth Motion was touching a See or Buyshoprick, called the Diocesse of *Kyllmore*, the Jurisdiction wherof is over the *Cavan O-Nealies* Contrie, and other Partes adjoyning. It was not bestowed on any *Englishman* or *Irish* by the Queene's Majestie or any hir Progenitors, within the Memory of Man. Of late there was a leude Friar come from *Rome* as a Delegate of the Pope's, that usurped it, dispersing abroad seditious Bulls and such lyke Trash. The Lord Deputie dispossessed hym of the Place, and hoped to chack him, to answer his Leudnes, or else to bring hym unto Submission. And because he judged it would be an increase of hir Majestie's Authority amongst those barbarous People to have a Buyshop placed there by hir Majestie (and he a Man of Creditt and Accompt) he mad choyse of the Deane of *Christchurch* to supplie the

N 2

Place,

Place, and to supplant the other usurping Buyshop. Sythe the Deane was content to accept it, not for Profit or Ambition's sake (for he had refused better things) but for a Desier to doe good. Therfor the Lord Deputie desired a Warrant to Install hym.

THE fifth Motion was, that there being a Warrant come to the Lord Deputy to bestow the Buyshoprick of *Killmallogh* in *Commendam* upon the Arch-Buyshop of *Tuam*, who had already another See annexed to his Buyshoprick, and if he might have this also (wherunto another is united) then he should have fower in all. The Lord Deputy doubted not but theyr Lordshippes did see the Inconveniences, that necessarily must insue this confusion of spiritual Dignities; whereof the more that were supplied, the more lykelyhood of the increase of Religion, and though yet the Livings were not sufficient for that Calling, yet he hoped that in short Time they would amend together with the World, and in the mean time that Living that is, would suffice for some
that

Sir John Perrott, Kt. 181

that hath, or might be reclaymed from the *Romish* Faith. Whereby other might be encouraged to be drawen from it to the trew Church. And therfor the Lord Deputy intreated theyr Lordships not to disalow of his Stay, considering in what respect he made it.

THE sixth Motion was, that upon the Lord Deputie's last Entry into *Dublyn*, there came Letters to his Hands directed from the Lords of the Privy Counsell to *Turlough, O-Neale*, and the Baron of *Dungannon*. The Direction of it selfe seeming to attribute to much unto them (for *Turlough* was termed Right Honourable) the Lord Deputy opned the Letters, and finding the Contents agreable to the Direction, thought good, by the Advise of the Counsell, to make stay of the Delivery of those Letters, least they should have puffed them up to high as Things then stood. But the Lord Deputy besought theyr Lordships to writt theyr Letters in allowance of *Turlough's* Dutie and Serviceablenes, in the Composition which he had mad, wherby he had strengthened

hymselfe by the aide of lawfull Peres under Government, with Caution, that theyr Lordships should not allow hym to high a Stile, for fear of Pride and Presumption, wherto his Place with any Applause would easily hurie hym, as the Lord Deputy knew best.

THE seventh Motion was, that inas-
much as it pleased the Queene's Maje-
stie to refer the Nomination of the Pri-
macy unto the Lord Deputy; he having
preferred one Doctor *Longe* unto it, did
finde that he discharged the Place with
Credite and the good Lyking of those
under hym, amongst whom, both by
preaching and governing otherwise, he did
much good, and won many; and the De-
puty did hope he should do more, if his
Credit were increased with the Increase
of a Counsellorship here, a Calling well-
beseeming not only his Degree and Place,
but also other Sufficiencies that are in hym
fitt for it. And therfor the Lord Deputy
humbly recommended the Preferment of
hym to theyr Lordships good Consider-
ation.

THE eighth and last Motion was in the Behalf of Sir *Lucas Dyllon*, who, although he were soe well knowen to theyr Lordships, as the Lord Deputy thought the Addition of his Commendacion should not greatly neede ; “ Yet he must needes
“ say that he found hym a faythfull and
“ a paynfull Councillor both abroad and
“ at home, and an earnest Favourer and
“ Furtherer of hir Majestie’s Proceedinges
“ for the Good of his Contrie without
“ any second Intention, in respect wher-
“ of he was specially drawen from his
“ Weale and Ease at home to discharge
“ the Services then committed unto hym.”
Therfor the Lord Deputy humbly praied theyr Lordships he might be answered with Expedition.

THE Lord Deputie havinge performed all these Services, for the present, projected these Plottes for time to come, and recommended these Mocions, all soe necessary and soe profitable for the good Government of that Realme, in such sorte and soe soone, as almost it is incredible,

foe greate Perills and Mischiefes should be prevented, and foe great Matters performed in foe short a Space, with the Losse of foe little Blood, and the Expence of foe little Time and Money : For First, it appereth by the former Discourse, and by other good Demonstrations, that at the Lord Deputie's coming into *Ierland* he found the *North* Parte of the Realme redie to enter into Rebellion, and to incite the Lords of *Mounster* and *Conaught* to combyne with them therin, *Turlough*, *O-Neale* redie to joyne with the Islanders, beinge brought in by *Sorleboy*, and they having brought with them *Shane O-Neale's* Sonne to countenance theyr Cause and theyr Cominge, theyr selves beinge more in Number, and better furnished than formerly they had byn seene, allso other brayve Ayd promised and expected, which noe doubt would have followed shortly, if they had found any good Successe at the first. All which Inconveniences, Daungers and Difficulties the Lord Deputie must incounter and prevent as it were, at his first Landing, or coming into the Land, or else to hazard his Credite and

Sir John Perrott, Kt. 185

and the State of that Contrie wherein he governed, or rather was beginning to governe. And yet all these Perills and imminent Combustions he did overcome and Pacified within lesse than tenne Weekes, settled the Hertes and Estates of the good Subjectes, subdu'd, or expelled the bad, tooke Pledges for all such as were suspected, compounded all Controversies betwixt the greate Lords, drew the *Northern* Lords to a Composition for the Mayntenance of 1200 Soldiers, almost all on theyr owne Charges, and passed thorow the five Provinces (as hymself wrote to the Lords of the Privy Counsell) within lesse than a Quarter of a Yere; notwithstanding the Impediments of the Services, and the fowle Weather which followed hym in the latter Part of his Journey. These Services seeme strange to be soe speedily and successfully performed, yet there are many livinge which were Eie Witness herof, so that it should seeme Industrie, Prudence, and Prosperitie, did strive at the first Entrance of the Lord Deputie's Government, which should gaine hym the greatest Honor and Furtherance. How
well

well his Services were allowed of by the Queene and hir Privy Counsell of *England*, as also how willing they were to graunt his reasonable Motions for the better Accomplishment of the Services that he intended, appereth by a Letter, which theyr Lordships wrote unto the Lord Deputie, which was as full of Commendation and Incoragment, as other future Letters and Messages were afterwards sometimes fraught with sharpe Censure and strict Restrayntes, both from the Queene his Soverayne, and from some others of hir Privey Counsell, either by hir Direction or Privitie. Such is the Fortune of Governors to be subject unto Censure, but we will begyn with this Approbation and Commendation, which was in this sorte.

AFTER our hartly Commendacions to your Lordship, hir Majestie havinge found how paynfully and proffitably you have employed your Time, since your Repayre into that Realme; hath by hir Letters, noe doubt to your singuler Comfort, testified unto you how thanckefully she doth accept therof. Soe we
also

Sir John Perrott, Kt. 187

also for our partes could not but let your Lordship understand, that as we are very glad that it hath pleased God to blesse your Travells with soe good successe, as well for hir Majestie's Service, as for your owne particular Credit : Soe you may assure your selfe we will not fayle in any thinge that shall lie in us to yelde our best Furthurance to the Advancement of the Service soe prosperously begune by you. And though our Aunswer to your sondry Letters hath not byn made with that Expedition you looked for ; We pray you thinck the same proceeded not of any lack of Care or Redines in us to have satisfied you therin ; but rather by reason of the multitude of great Affayers which have byn of late here in hand (occasioned aswell by the Parliament, as otherwise) And as for the particular Poyntes of your Letters, wherin you desier our Resolution. First touching the Composition made with Turlough, Lenough, and the rest of the principal Persons in Mounster, as we doe conceive that it is a thinge that not only tendeth to the Reformation of that Province ; but also giveth juste Cause of Hope, that the sayd Province beinge reformed, the rest of that Realme

188 *The LIFE of*

Rea'me will with the more Facillitie be reduced to Civillity; considering that the sayd Province hath hertofore served for a principal Refuge for the disordered and undutifull Persons of the whole Realme; soe we for our partes cannot but yelde all the Fartherance we may, to a Matter, that carieth soe greate Probabillity and Lykelyhood, to worke not only some good Reformation in that Realme, but alsoe within few Yeres to disburden both hir Majestie and this Realme of a greate deale of extraordinary Charges that hath byn employed there. And therfor touching the 250 l. for every Band of an Hundred, that shall serve in the sayd Province, which in the whole (besydes the Contribution of the Contrie the Bands beinge Eleven in Number) amounteth unto 2750 l. we have soe farre pre-vayled with hir Majestie therin, as she hath yelded to the sayd Allowance of 2750 l. soe as hir Charges may be otherwise eased, by the Discharge of some of those Bandes now in Pay there: For that hir Majestie conceiveth that a Garrison of 1500 Soldiers being maynteyned in that Province, there shall be the lesse neede to intertayne any greate Forces

Sir John Perrott, Kt. 189

Forces in the rest of the Provinces of that Realme. And wheras you desired for the erecting of the sayd Garisons, that there should be sent over 600 Men into that Realme, wherof 400 Men to be imbarcked for Dublyn, and 200 for Waterford. We have therin according to your Request alledy given Order, that the 400 that are required to be sent to Dublin shall be at Chester by the 15th of February next insuing, where they shall finde sufficient Shipping for the Transportation of them, as also shall receive there a Monethes Pay. At which time you shall doe well to send from thence some discrete Person to take the Charge of the conducting of them over. And to see the sayd Numbers both for theyr Furniture and Personages, to be such as shall be meete for hir Majestie's Service. Wherin we have given in hir Majestie's Name a speciall Charge to the Commissioners in the Counties where the sayd 400 are appoynted to be levied, to have due Regard in the Choyse of the Men, as they may be in all respectes found serviceable, as you may well perceive by a Minute of one of the Letters sent into that Countie. And wheras amongst other
things

things conteyned in your Letters touching the Choyse of the sayd Men, you desired they might be levied in those Counties where they are hard of Breede, and such as may be best able to endure Colde, and other Incommodities incident to those that serve in that Realme.

Although we have given a speciall Charge therein to the Commissioners (as you may perceive by the sayd Minute) to have due Regard therunto, yet notwithstanding we thinck meete, that those Men now appoynted to be sent over, should be layd in Garrison for a time in those Partes of that Realme (if by you it shall be thought meete) that are freest from those Incommodities, untill such time as they shall be acquaynted with the Nature and Disposition of the Contrie: For that the old Bandes now serving there are the better able to indure those Incommodities, than those that are now to be sent over. And as touching the 200 Men you desire may be sent to Waterford, we have thought good (finding it a very cumberfom, and chargeable Matter to send Men from Bristol, which is the ordinary Place of imbarquing) to Waterford in the Winter season; to deferre the same untill the latter ende of March. Un-

lesse

Sir John Perrott, Kt. 191

lesse we shall understand from you some Cause of more Expedition to be used therein. And touching an Increase of an 100 l. per Ann. to be added to Sir Richard Bingham's Interteynement, wherein you desire our Fortherance to hir Majestie. Forasmuch as we doe finde hir Highnes hardly drawen to yelde to any Increase of Intertaynement, we have thought good to advise your Lordship, that for his Reliefe he may have the Charg of the Foot-band that serveth in that Province, and that the Captayn, to whom the Charge of that Band is committed, may have the Charge of some of these Bandes that are to be erected and placed in Ulster, Touching the rest of your Requests, to have the Buysshoprick of Kylmore bestowed upon the Deane of Christ-Church. Hir Majestie's comfortable Letters to Tirlough, Lenough, hir Highnes Assent for callinge of the Primat of Armagh to be of the Counsell there, and a Warrant to take Surrenders as well of Orelighes, as allso the rest Irishrie. We have soe dealt with hir Majestie therein as you shall receve by this Bearer sufficient Authority from hir Highnes for the Accomplishment therof, &c.

THIS

THIS Letter being written from the Lords of the Privy Counsell in *England* unto the Lord Deputy, in Commendation and Allowance of his Services, and in satisfying his reasonable Requests for the Fortherance of future Services, did noe doubt incorrage hym much to procede in the Performance and the Accomplishment of his best Indevors: For allthough it is sayd, that Virtue is a Reward to it selfe, yet when virtuous Actions are accompany'd with Commendation, especially of the Prince, or of the supream Magistrates, there a kynde of Spurre is added to animate the Well-doer. Soe the Lord Deputy being thus comforted with the good Approbation of his Services by the Queene, and hir Privy Counsellors, begynneth to bend all the Force of his Industrie and Imaginations to the Reducing of that *Realme of Ireland* into Civillitie and Tranquilitie. For the better effecting wherof he first begynneth with Religion, and therfor he addresseth his Letters unto the Buyshopes and Prelates of best Account (especially to those with-
in

in the Pale) for the Repayer of decayed Churches; wherby the People might in time be the better induced to repayer unto them to heare Divine Service, knowing (as he hymselfe sayd) that the Service of God was the surest Knott to tie them unto the Obedience due unto theyr Prince, and to deale justly with one another. Next unto this principall and first Poynt of Wisdome (which is the Feare and trew Service of God) he directed his Labors to make the rude People capable and conformable to the Lawes. Which are the trew Ballances of Right and Justice; to this Ende he allso directed his Letters unto the cheife Lordes within the Pale, and next to the Precinctes thereof, to yelde that theyr Contries might be divided into Counties, where there were none before, and to place therein such Officers as were usuall in the Shiers of *England*; as Sheriffes, Feodaries, Excheators, and the lyke; by which Meanes the poore People might have the more redie, and lesse chargeable Trial of small Causes at Home, the ignorant might be instructed in the Law, and the willfull might be

O

made

made subject to the Law, the great Lords might be brought from Tyranising of theyr Tenants, and they on the other syde might learne to support themselves by lawfull meanes from unlawfull Usurpations and Exactions. This beinge consented to by most, and not contradicted by any, but some few of the worst sorte, and that rather in secret, than by open Contradiction or Opposition, the Lord Deputy made severall new Counties.

THESE Contries being divided into Shiers, and Officers placed in them, the Lord Deputie wrote his Letters unto the Justices of the Peace, and other Officers appoynted to serve in the same, for the Discharge of their Duties in this sorte.

AFTER my right hartly Commendations, havinge of late entered into Consideration of the present Estate of the Shiers within the Realme, both how hir Majestie's publick Peace, thorow the Ministry of some well-chosen for the same, might be maynteyned, and also all civill and popular Contentions rising betwene Partie and Partie

I might

Sir John Perrott, Kt. 195

might be heard and ordered by the Justices of the Peace in the Assemblies at the Quarter-Sessions (without drivinge the poore People to seake theyr Remedy farther of;) I have thought good by the Advise of them to nominate and appoynt you as Commissioners for the Peace in that Countie, not doubting, Gentlemen, of your sorte (well qualified and sincerely affected) you can discern of the Importance of such a Charge, and to what Degree of Trust and Credit for the Service of hir Majestie you are called, being indeed a Function of good Account in a well ordered Common-wealth. I have also made choyse of Feodaries and Eschetors, with Direction by Writt to the Sheriff and your selves to appoynt two Coroners; for that as they are to be used as inferior Assistants to you in such Poynts of Service as belongeth to theyr Charge; Soe likewise you are to choose within every Baronry of the Shier two sufficient and discrete Gentlemen to serve as High Constables, with two pettie Constables in eche Parish, to see them sworn unto hir Majestie as apperteyneth. Soe that if there be in all Parties that Industrie and Action that apperteyneth, and is principally

expected at your Handes: I see no Cause but that the Course of Inormities, which hath heretofore runne with more Impunity than was to be wished, may be stopped, and the State of that Contrie brought from good to better, or at least not suffered to declyne agayne from ill to worse, as in these late broken times it hath don. Only I now recommend to holde specially the Quarter Sessions upon due Sommons, and in Places convenient. There to make Inquiry of all Offences and Offenders, with other Things as the Law in that Case limiteth, and you in Discretion shall thinck meete for the Preservation of the Peace and Compounding of private Controversies, whereby evill Men may be corrected, and good Men cherished; which is the Thing I most desier for the Good of you all; and to that Ende I doe, and will dispose all my Studie and Travell. And as for your Parts, I cannot doubt but in soe good a Work, which regardeth chiefly the Weale of your Contrie (wherof you are specially interested, being principall Members of the same) you will performe as much as is expected at your Handes (which I will be right glad of :) Soe for my Part, I must let you understand, that in which of you
soever

Sir John Perrott, Kt. 197

Soever shall be found any just Crime, or Defect, wherby soe good a Service shall be either hindered or corrupted, let hym assuredly looke to be brought under such Penaltie and Reprehension as the Lawes in that Case do appoynt, besydes the deminishinge of his Credit and good Opinion with me. Which I thought good to insert in this Letter, to the Ende that none of you should be ignorant how I am affected iouching this Charge and Administration now committed unto you. And soe for this time I betake you to the Grace and Favor of God. Dublyn the 15th of December, 1584.

Your very lovinge Frende,

JO. PERROT.

BESYDES this Letter, the Lord Deputy sent and sett forth certayn Orders to be observed by the Justices of the Peace within theyr severall Limites thorow the Realme, conteyning Ten Articles, which to avoyd Tedioufnes are here omitted. And allso for the farther Confirmation of all these Conclusions, and for the Addition of

some new Lawes, as for the Abrogatinge of some of the old (if Necessitie should soe require) the Lord Deputy caused a Parliament to be summoned, in which most of the Nobility of that Nation, and soe many of the Spiritualtie and Commonalty of that Kingdom, as were sufficient to supply all the Places of the three States necessary for the Parliament were there assembled. In which there were none of any Degree or Callinge suffered to come in any Cloathes, but only in *English* Attire; and allthough it seem'd both uncouth and cumbersome for some of them to be soe clad (who preferred Costome before Decency, and Opinion before Reason) yet he constrayned them that did neede any Constraynt, to come in such civil Sorte, as did best become the Place, and the present Service; The better to encourage them herto, the Lord Deputy bestowed both Gownes and Cloakes of Velvet and Satten on some of them, as *Turlough*, *Lenough*, and others, who yet thought not themselves so richely, or at the least soe contentedly attired as in theyr Mantell's, and other theyr Con-
try

try Habites. Amongst whom because it is a Matter of some Mirthe, and that doth discover theyr Myndes, thoe it be not of any great Wayght, we may remember one, who beinge put into *English* Apparell, came unto the Lord Deputy, and besought one Thing of hym (in a pleasant Sorte, as they are most of them wittie) which was that it would please hys Lordshipe, to let one of his Chaplyn's, whome he termed his Preiste, to accompany hym arrayed in *Irish* Apparell, and then, *quoth he*, they will wonder as much at hym as they do now at me ; soe shall I passe more quietly and unpoynted at. By this it should seeme, that they thinck, when once they leave theyr olde Costomes, then all Men wonder at them, and that then they are out of all Frame or good Fashion, according to that Saying, *They which are borne in Hell, thinck there is no Heaven.* In this Parliament, as the Lord Deputie had the chiefe Place (representing the Queene's Roome and Authority) soe was he the most eminent Man that came thither, both in Goodlines of Stature, Majesty of Countenance, and in all Things

else that might yelde Ornament to soe greate and high a Presence ; for as they doe witnes, whoe were Eie-witnesses of the same, they never beheld a Man of such Comlines in Countenance, Gesture, Gate, and other Features, as he appered to be in his Parliament Robes. And as a *German* Lord affirmed, who was at that Parliament, he had travelled thorow *Germany, Italy, Fraunce, England, and Ireland* ; but yet in all those Contries never did he see any Man comparable to Sir *John Perrott*, the Lord Deputy of *Ireland*, for his Porte and Majestie of Personage, whose Picture this *German* Lord did much desire to carrie with hym into that Contrie. How much the Majestie of Countenance and Comlines of Personages doth breed Reverence and Regard in the common People (who judge most by the Sight and outward Senses) may be proved by the Example of *Scipio*, whom the vulgar barbarous People of *Spayne* did wonderfully admire and obey even in the Field, for the outward Sight of his goodly Shape, and portely Presence. The lyke *Paulus Jovius* writeth of *Sforza the Great,*

Sir John Perrott, Kt. 201

Great, that the rude Contry People, which never saw hym before, did commonly saluted hym with as greate Reverence (sometimes beinge slenderly accompanied) as if he were Emperour over all. Such Impression of Reverence and Obedience the Majestie of a Governor's Personage did work in the Myndes of the Multitude. The Lord Deputie's Manner was at his Cominge to the Cloath of Estate, to doe a low Obeysance unto the same before he sat downe.

THIS Parliament held at *Dublyn* had two Sessions. The first begun the xxvjth of *April* in the xxvijth Yere of the Queene's Raigne, and continued till the xxvth Day of *May* in the said Yere ; when it was prorogued untill *Aprill* next following.

IN this first Session of Parliament there was some Difference in the lower House of Parliament, about a Bill for the suspension of *Poyning's Acte*, past in the tenth Yere of the Raigne of King *Henry* the seventh, before Sir *Edward Poyninge's*, Knight, then Lord Deputy of *Ireland* ; which Bill, for the

the suspension of the sayd Act, was impugned by some of the Pale, and overthrowen by them at the third Reading. Afterwards they seemed more inclinable for the Passage of the sayd Bill, prayed Conference with the Lord Deputy, and departed from hym appering satisfied in their Doubts. Wherupon the Parliament was prorogued for three Days, and yet afterwards; notwithstandinge the Qualification of the sayd Bill agreed upon by theyr owne Committees (they Consenting soe to passe it) did yet overthrow the Byll the second Time. About this there grew much Dissention and Dislyke. For this Byll was to repeale *Poyninge's Acte*, which did restrayne that noe Parliament should be holden in *Ireland* before the Actes be certified into *England*. But this Byll was to suspend that Acte, and to gaine them Liberty to treat of all Matters, either for the Commodity of the Queene's Majestie, or the publick Good of the Common-weale. Which some of the *Irishmen* either mistaking, or conceiving that it was framed for another Intent, than it did pretend, they

Sir John Perrott, Kt. 203

they resisted it, and therin theyr own Good and Freedom. Therby they drew on the Lord Deputie's Disfavor towards them for their Obstinacie, (as he conceived it,) and Displeasure towards hym from the Queene of *England*, for graunting them, or being willinge to graunt, overmuch Freedom of Conference, and Conclusion, as she conceived it, and was informed by some.

THE first Session of this first Parliament in the Lord Deputie's Time, being finished and these fore-named Actes concluded, the Lord Deputy beinge not willing to be idle, determyned presently to make a Journey into *Ulster*, for the pacifying of some Dissentions betwixt the Lords there, the Settling of Peace in that Province, and the Division therof into Shier Ground, with Officers to be placed therein after the *English* Order and Manner. He leste the Arch-Buyshop of *Dublyn* and Sir *Henry Wallop*, as Justices in his Absence. And he was noe sooner departed, but shortly after the Justices wrote a private Letter unto Sir *Francis Walsingham*,
Prin-

204 *The LIFE of*

Principal Secretary, agaynst the Lord Deputy's Undertaking of the *Northern* Jorneyes in his own Person, as making them unprofitable, chargeable and needles; with as many Reasons as they could devise agaynst the same. Whereby they drew not only Sir *Francis Walsingham* to write a Letter unto the Lord Deputy (by way of Advice and Persuasion) to desist from these Jorneyes, but the Queene was moved to write in Myslyke and Disallowance of the same; and from this time the Lord Deputy found lesse Comfort and more Crosses in his Government than before. For Sir *Jeffery Fenton*, the Secretary of *Ireland*, beinge in *England*, did informe and instill divers Things into the Queene's Eares, that did the Lord Deputy noe good. Notwithstanding he continued his Courses as well as he could, thoe he were sometimes discomforted. And in this *Northern* Jorney, as it appereth by his Letter from *Armagh* the xxviij of *Julie*, his Lordship writeth to the Counsell of *Ireland*, that he found good Lykelyhood of establishing Things in those Partes according to his Desire: That *Tirlough, Lenough,*

Sir John Perrott, Kt. 205

nough, *Magwier*, *Ochane*, and *Hugh Mac Shane O-Neale*, with all their *Scotts*; Also the Erle of *Tyrone*, *Mac Mahon*, *Maggennis* and *Ohanlon* had byn with hym. And that the Accesse of some others, whom he expected, had byn hindred by the extreame foule Weather which had fallen, his Campe beinge for the space of fixe or seven Dayes inclosed with Waters. But the Day of the Date of his Letters the Weather breaking up, and the Waters fallinge, he marched towards *Dungannon*, where he expected the Repaier of *Shane O-Neale's* Sonnes and others. His Lordship had received Intelligence of some Troops lately arived in *Clankuboy*, under the Conduct of *Surleboy* his Sonne, to the Number of 300 or 400, agaynst whom he dispatched two Bandes of Footemen, under the Leading of Captayn *Henshaw* and *Rice ap Hugh*; with 40 or 50 Horsemen of Captayn *Leaes*, appoynting the Master of the Ordinance to joyne with *Sir Henry Bagnall's* Footebandes and Horsemen, which lie in Garrison at *Knockfergus*:

DURINGE

DURINGE the Lord Deputie's Abroad at the *Nury*, whilst he staied there for *Agnus Mac Connell's* coming thither, (who, with his Mother, made humble Suite to have Accessse for some Tocatie and Conclusion touching the *Glinnes*) his Lordship that while gave Order for the Pursuite of the *Scotts*, and the resisting of theyr Attempts in the Nether *Clandkuboy*. With whom, *Francis Stafford* having the Charge of that Service, had a Fight before with good Successe, the Manner wherof, as the Lord Deputy reported it by Letter, and the Counsell of *Ireland* advertised it into *England*, was thus.

“ THE Incounter between Mr. *Francis Stafford* and the *Scotts*, together with
 “ the *Irish* joyned with them, the 28 of
 “ *July*, 1585. began at vij of the Clocke
 “ in the Morninge, and continued untill
 “ three in the Afternoone, they never givinge
 “ over the *English* in ten Myles
 “ Marche. The *Scotish* and *Irish* were
 “ about the Number of one Thousand :
 “ For *Con Mac Neale*, Oge his Sonne,
 “ and

“ and all his Followers, the *Scottes* of the
“ *Duffme*, the *Okellies*, and most of the
“ Woodmen of *Kilwarnand*, *Mac Carte’s*
“ Contry, together with *Hugh Mac Phe-*
“ *lynnes* Sonne being joyned with them
“ (who of themselves at theyr Arivall
“ were but 300, and then by theyr As-
“ sociats growen to be betwixt 800 and
“ 1000.) Mr. *Stafford* had but 170
“ Men, with whom he indured Fight
“ thorow all the Woods of *Kylultagh* a-
“ gaynst all them, in which Fight the
“ *English*, with theyr Commanders Di-
“ rections, carried themselves with that
“ Valor and Judgment, that thay reco-
“ vered theyr Place of Strength with
“ the Losse of viij Men, which were
“ kylled most of them with theyr owne
“ Guydes behynd, and xij hurte. They
“ kylled xxvij of the best the Enimie
“ had, and hurte above forty in this
“ marchinge, skyrmishinge Incounter.

THIS the Lord Deputy and Counsell
of *Ireland* did report unto the Counsell
of *England*, for the Credit of both Leader
and Soldiers. And by the same Report
Shane

208 *The LIFE of*

Shane Mac Brian served both then, and at other times well and forwardly. After that time the Enimies shunned all Places and Occasions of Fight, and were once gon over the River *Ban*, to *Tyrone*; but the Erle there, with the Companies the Lord Deputy lefte hym, drave them back agayn; where *Frauncis Stafford*, with a Supplie sent from the Lord Deputy, had them in Pursuite.

WHAT the Occasion and Successe of the Lord Deputie's owne Services in this *Northern* Jorney was, we may learne partly by his owne Letters written unto the Lords of the Privy Counsell in *England*, and by Relation of others who served with him there. Upon the Lord Deputie's Returne he writt this unto the Lords.

IT may please your Honourable Lordships, havinge mad a Jorney this Somer into the North, I thincke it my Dutie to let your Lordships understand both the Occasions and Successe therof. I was drawen thither the last Yere by the Scottish Attemptes, and upon theyr Expulsion I brought O-Neale
I and

and the Chieftaines there to such a Composition, as your Lordships have understood by my Letters therof written hertofore. But as I neither did, nor could ever assure that the same would stand firme without Fortification, according to the Platt that I added therunto: Soe I thought it my Dutie to leave noe Labour unbestowed that might uphold it, and other Orders lykewise establisshed for the keeping of those People in the best reformed State of Obedience that might be. In respect as well therof, as allso of former, and of other new Occasions. The first was an Intelligence I had of a Combination in the North, for the bringing in of Frenchmen thither, wherin a Papist Buysshop should have byn used. But as the Report of my Forney did impeach theyr Purpose, soe my Cominge thither hath given some hope that it is dissolved. The second was an Advertisement I received of a Preparation that Alexander Mac Sorley made to come over, as synce he hath don with 3 or 400 Scottes. The third, that I understood the State of Tirlaugh, Lenagh, O-Neale (partely thorow his Want of Government) to be weakned and decayed after his Returne from this Parliament,

liament, and his Shew of Obedience; insoe-
much that his Followers forsooke hym, and
refused to yelde such Duties, as he was to
answer the Soldiers, wherby they were put
in want, and the Composition in hazard of
overthrowinge. The fourth, and one of the
most to be doubted, was, that Shane O-
Neale's Sonnes, using the Advantage of those
Oportunities, grew greate, which I thought
not good to suffer; but to devise Meanes to
pull them downe at the first.

Havinge travelled for these Porposes as
farre as Dungannon: I sent for the Chief-
taynes of all the Partes of Ulster, except of
Clankuboy's side, whom I lefte to attend
the Service agaynst the Scottes. The rest
came all unto me, as O-Neale, and with
hym O-Chaine, and Maguire, and Inter-
cessor from Brian Caragh, (for these be his
Vriagts) and lykewise Mac Donnell, Chiefe
of the Galloglasses, and Art Mac Donnell,
that is theyr Captayn, and carieth the Credit
away from Mac Donnell. Thither came
also Odonnell, and with hym Hugh Duffe
Odonnell, the Tanist of Tirconnell, Odo-
hartie, and Sir Owen Otoyle; besydes Shane
O-Neale's

Sir John Perrott, Kt. 211

O-Neale's Sonnes, Mac Mahon, Mageniz, Ohanlan, the Captaynes of Feruy, Fues, and Dartry, Tirlagh, Brasilaugh, the Chiefe of the Donnelaghcs, who favor Shane O-Neale's Sonnes, and the Oquines, with divers other Septes. The first Thing that I thought meete to be done, was to demaund Pledges, such as I named unto them, every one yelded unto it, except one James Caragh, a Man of the chiefeft Credit amongst the Donnelaghcs, and most devoted to Shane O-Neale's House. And every other brought in Pledges at the Dayes assigned, except Art Oge O-Neale, the most perilous Fellow of all Shane O-Neale's Sonnes, as well for his stirringe Head, and malicious Stomach to the State, as for his Corage to execute Mischiefe wherto he was prone, and tooke Advantage of the Time, &c.

THIS much and more, the Lord Deputy writt in his Letter unto the Lords of the Privy Counsell in England of his Services in that Northern Journey. Wherin (as hymselfe sayth in the Postscript of his sayd Letter) he did reduce all Ulster into Shiers, usinge the Advise of the severall

Lords for bounding of the same, and soe made six new Shiers, where never any was before, the least of them being xxiiij Myles over at the least: The perfecte Note of Division, together with the Names of the Shiers, he sent unto theyr Lordships.

AFTER the Returne of the Lord Deputy from his *Northern* Journey, he received Letters from the Queene and from Sir *Frauncis Walsingham*, both to one Porpose, bearing Date the xxvjth of *July*, 1585. porporting a Dislyke of his sayd Journey, and of some other stricke Courses taken by hym in his Government, the same Proceeding by the secret Persuasion of those two chiefly, unto whom the Lord Deputie lefte the Sword in his Absence, and wrote theyr Letters agaynst hym unto Sir *Frauncis Walsingham* and others; the Copies wherof are yet extant: The Lord Chancellor of *Ireland* begynning now to oppose hymselfe agaynst the Lord Deputy, and to draw some of the Counsell there on his Side.

THESE

THESE Letters directed from the
Queene, and from Sir *Frauncis Walsing-*
ham, gave hym to understand how it was
advertised that some great Discontent was
lyke to grow amongst the Subjects of that
Realme: " For that the Lord Deputy re-
" quired of them the Oath of Obedience,
" appoynted Officers to looke into theyr
" Pattents, and gave Warrant at that Par-
" liament, amonge other Statutes to pre-
" ferre the lyke Lawes as were established
" in *England* agaynst *Recusants*. Allso
" his Journey into the *North* (how good
" Successe soever the same had) was in-
" timated to be chargeable, uncertayne,
" and a Meane rather to move them of
" those Partes unto rising up into Armes
" than to breede Quietnes and Obedience
" in that Contry. " In which Letters of
Admonition it was signify'd, " That hir
" Majestie was well perswaded of his
" greate Care and Discretion, and she
" could but interpret all his Doinges in
" good part, as proceeding of a speciall
" Zeale and Care for hir Service, for hir
" Safety, and to reduce hir Subjects
P 3 there,

“ there to Obedience and Conformitie of
“ Religion (as hir owne Wordes were
“ written) notwithstanding there was
“ speciall Caveat given that he should
“ forbear the tendering the Oath of Obe-
“ dience to Persons of Nobilitie and Qua-
“ litie ; and to forbear the present Search
“ of theyr Obedience ; considering the
“ manifold Practises of ill affected Neigh-
“ bours, and the Disposition of ill mynded
“ Subjects to take small Occasions of Dis-
“ contentment in that Realme, therby to
“ grow into Disobedience : And also a
“ Course was advised to grow into Com-
“ position with the *Northern* Invaders.

THESE Letters being brought unto the Lord Deputy, brought hym noe small Griefe, to see his Services by private Information (as it seemed unto hym) suspected to want sound Judgment and warie Proceeding, which he did the more grieve at, considering he knew from whence the Groundes of these Intimations came. And finding good Successe in all his Services, yet seeing the same not to be soe censured as he intended it ; because his *Jorneyes*,
wher-

wherby he planted Peace in the Contry, were helde chargeable, doubtfull and dangerous ; his Reformation of Religion, wherby he would remove Corruption from the Hearte to make all the Body more sounde, was thought to be a Stirring up of theyr Hartes agaynst the State, whom he sought to unite more firmly unto the State.

HE on the other Side, finding the Pride and Power of the Adversaries abated, the People inclined to yeld Conformitie to all Commaundements, thought this a fitte time to worke that Reformation, which in former times could not be compassed ; and therefore thought it not fitte to lose the present Oportunitie of gayninge the Queene Obedience, Peace in the Contrie, and Honor to his Government. But finding that all this was construed, as tending to Innovation, and lykely to stirre Dissention and Danger, he was much discouraged, but yet helde on his Course as well as he could being soe restrayned.

NOT longe before the Lord Deputie's taking this Jorney into *Ulster*, did he send Captayn *Dantry*, Seneshall of *Clandeboy*, unto the King of *Scotland*, with Letters to intreate, and to treat with his Majestie, that none of the Islanders should be suffered to come over into the *North Partes of Ireland*, as formèrly they had done, with Assurance that if his Majestie would take Order for the same, there should be good Correspondence of Justice and Kindness shewed to the People of that Nation, to which the King's Majestie answered by Letter in this manner.

JAMES R.

*R*ight Trustie and Well-beloved, We greete you well. We have by this Bearer Captayn *Dantrie* received your Answer of our Letter; Uttering your good Disposition to Justice by the Proffe you geive to your immediate Order taken with our Marchants Goods restrayned by your Commandment at sondrie Partes upon that Coast. For which good Office We both thanck you hartely, and mutuallie do promise, that Sopran of *Dublyn*,
as

Sir John Perrott, Kt. 217

as allſo the other two Marchants of Carricktergus, pretending then to have been ſpoyled by Brodſtones, the other by Agnus Mac Connell and his People, ſhall have the lyke Courſe of Juſtice, patent to theyr Suites towards the Reſtraynt, and his Brother, Sorleboys Brother and Sonnes, and the Followers, from cominge into Ireland crai-ved by the Bearer's Credit: We ſhall immediately direct our Letters to the Parties, inhibiting and diſcharging the ſayd Perſons to make any Incurſions and Inroades upon that Contry of Ireland, to the troubling of the Quiet of that Peace under the Payne of Treason. And if they nevertheles attempt the contrary, We ſhall perceiue and uſe them as our Rebels, and give Commiſſion to Mac Allen, and the Contrie thereabouts, to riſe and proſecute them accordingly. As on the other Part we crave of you, that they be well and kyndly uſed by you in all thinges, which may be juſtly claymed by them; as our Expectation is you will doe. Wherupon reſting, We committ you to God's good Protection. St. Andrewes the 8th of Auguſt, 1585. and of Our Raigne the xixth Yere.

THESE

THESE Things passing thus in prosperous sorte in the Lord Deputie's Service, he began there to be much envied, and such secret Informations were still prosecuted agaynst hym that from thence forwards the Lord Deputy found much Opposition in all his Actions of Accompt; and the more quiet the Contrie grew by his Industrie and Indevors, the more Incensments were wrought agaynst hym: Private Grudge prevayling, where open Hostilities could do hym noe Harme. Amongst the rest of his Maligners, Secretary *Fenton* being then in *England*, became an apte Instrument, whilst he continued there by secret Informations to make the Lord Deputie's best Devoirs seeme defective or dangerous.

THE Lord Deputy, after his Returne, sent over unto the Privy Counsell in *England*, the reformed Acte for the Attaynder of *Desmond*, with others; with the Examinations taken sithence of the indirect Practises of some in the last Session of Parliament, who under Pretence to oppose themselves

Sir John Perrott, Kt. 219

selfes agaynst the Suspension of *Poyning's* Act, did (as he sayd) seeke to make void the whole Parliament; because they could abyd noe Reformation in Matters of Religion or State. He complayned much agaynst theyr Stubbornesse, alledging "that
" theyr Practises to draw back agayn the
" *Offorells, Oreighlies, Maguise*, and such
" others as were newly brought to Government, and to bring them in Jealousie of a Parliament, contrary to the Expectation that they had of it, he thought
" to be noe Way sufferable.

IN the same Letter the Lord Deputie sayth, " That there had byn scarce the
" Form, much lesse the Substance of Law
" and Justice; which moved hym to sette
" downe certayn Orders, to appoynt such
" Officers, as be in *England*, to see the same
" duly executed; but that had byn greatly hindred by the Obstinacie of many of
" the Gentlemen, who refused to be Justices of the Peace; because they would
" not be put unto the Oath of Supremacie." Which Contempt the Lord Deputie helde to draw neere towards an Offence

fence in the highest Degree; yet using the Advise of the Counsell in such unaccustomed Case, he proceeded noe farther agaynst them; but bound them to their Appearance in the *Starre* or *Castell* Chamber at *Dublyn*, meaning to punish them there by Fine at Discretion: Then they began to bow; but having received some Herte from their Agents belyke out of *England*, they bore up their Heades boldly agayn. Wherof the Lord Deputy complayned much, and wrote unto the Privy Counsell in *England*, " That unlesse
" the Queene and their Lordships did
" vouchsafe to prolesse an earnest Mislyke
" of these late undutifull Attempts, both
" by this Refusal, and by others in the last
" Session of Parliament, and accordingly
" to give expresse Order for their severall
" Correction, he would looke for nothing but dangerous Alteration; which
" having pre-warned, he helde hymselfe
" discharged in Dutie, humbly requiring
" his Revocation thence, as utterly unfitt
" to rule, being soe much over-ruled to
" his Disgrace, in Cases soe weightily importing hir Majestie's Service, and the
" Good

Sir John Perrott, Kt. 221

“ Good of that State. ” In the same Letter he signifieth, That Captayn *Dantry* was returned from the King of *Scottes*, and sheweth the Reasons that moved hym to send the sayd Message ; with which he sent the Kinge’s Answer to the Privy Counsell in *England*, to the Ende “ that
“ theyr Lordships (as the Lord Deputy wrote unto them) “ might see the good
“ Offices of Amitie offered by the Kinge.

IN the same Letter, bearing Date the vijth of *September*, 1585. the Lord Deputy finding hymselfe and his Services crossed, and that Answers, Dispatches and Directions came slowly out of *England*; he sayth thus : “ I trouble your Lordships
“ with often writing and longe Letters;
“ wherunto I am the more inforced ; because I can have noe Answers or Solutions from your Lordships, either to direct me in this Service, or to satisfie me
“ for your honourable Allowances of me
“ and my Service. I am driven, as it
“ were, to propound, and write agayn, as
“ though I were answered for Matters of
“ State ; and allso to encounter slanderous
“ rous

222 *The L I F E of*

“ rous Reportes, and malicious Practises;
 “ wherof if your Lordships provide not
 “ a favourable Redresse, to yeild me more
 “ Comfort than hitherto I have had, I
 “ must give all over, as a discouraged
 “ Man: And soe cravage Pardon, if
 “ Grief have caried me away in any
 “ Thing over earnestly, I take my humble
 “ Leave.

Another Matter that moved the Lord Deputy unto some Discontentment was, that when the Malicious could not pre-vayle by Misreportes, then they began to rayse Reportes of his Revocation, to the Ende that the ill-affected Subjects might have Cause to rejoyce, and hope of Libertie, wherby they might grow to more Licentiousness. This the Lord Deputie hearing of, sayd, “ That if there were any
 “ such Porpose of Revocation, soe it were
 “ with hir Majestie’s Favor, he should be
 “ most glad of it, as of one of the best
 “ good Turnes hir Majestie could bestow on hym; but wished, if it were
 “ soe, that it should be more secretly carried, even untill the very putting of it
 “ in

“ in Execution, to avoyd the many Incon-
“ veniences, that doe allways follow the
“ Bruites of Alteration, and the Intermis-
“ sion of Government. But if there were
“ noe such Thing meant, then it was one of
“ the most dangerous Practises, that the
“ Enimies of the present Calmenes, and
“ Reformation intended, could have used,
“ the Effects wherof then began to burst
“ forth; ” and further, would, if the Lord
Deputy should have suffered it to runne on
still. Which he thought not good to doe,
but did use all the Meanes he might to
stoppe it, and to hunt out the first Author.
Wherin he found that it partely grew out
of a Letter written from one *Sheriffe* to a
Friend of his in *Dublyn*, called *Kelly*. But
yet the Lord Deputy did doubt, that this
Rumor could not have grown to soe
stronge Credite in soe short a time as it did ;
but that it sprange out of some bigger
Roote than yet he could find. That *She-*
riffe was the same bad Fellow, which,
the Lord Deputy certified the Counsell of
England, had fled thence, when he was
commanded to staie to answer the De-
ceits he had committed in the Office of
the

the *Ordnance* to the Valew of 1700 *l.* And now the Deputy had written to have hym sent over unto *Ireland*, as well to answer that, as vj Barrels of Corne Pouder, the same conteyning one hundred Pounds a-peece, which he sold at *Chester*, being put in Trust, with the Conduct of the Munitions thither. This the Lord Deputy certified unto the Privy Counsell in *England*, signifying withal that his Earnestnes in sifting out such Abuses and bad Fellows made them soe open-mouthed agaynst hym: For if he would give every Man his Will, and let goe all Abuses, Pickeries, and Deceites, he might have the good Words and Willes of such kynde of Men more than he had, to the Harme of hir Majestie and the State, and to the Touch of his owne Conscience.

ONE Thinge had almost been overpast, that the Lord Deputy at his last being in *Ulster*; when all Things were quieted, and made suer with Pledges, entered into the Consideration of *O-Neale's* Doeings, and of the State of the Soldiers to be maynteyned by the Composition.

He

He found *O-Neale*, by reason of his Unweildiness (thorow Age and otherwise inclined for Ease-sake) to yelde all the Hither-Partes of his Territories, upon reasonable Composition to the Erle of *Tyrone*, and his owne Sonne Sir *Arthur*. The Lord Deputy did the rather consent thereto, thinking it a Meane to abolish the Title and Greatnes of *O-Neale* during his Life, and cleane extinguishing it, and drawing the Dependencie of *Vriaghs* wholly to the State after his Decease. For these Considerations, and holding up of some Part of the Composition, and relieving of the Soldiers Want, and also for the keeping downe of *Shane O-Neale's* Sonnes, this Agreement was concluded on between them by Indenture sealed and published in the Campe.

By this time the Queene and Counsell of *England* began to be incensed agaynst the Lord Deputie, by Meanes of divers secret Complaynts exhibited agaynst hym, proceeding from some of the Counsell in *Ireland*; as the Lord Chancellor there and others, being well aggravated and sett on

Q

by

by Secretary *Fenton*, whilst he remayned in *England*: As namely, that the Inhabitants of the Pale found themselves grieved with certayn Impositions of Money, Corne, Beanes, and other Provision for Household; which was layd upon them in lieu of Coste. Allso Fault was found, that the Lord Deputy should by Commission or otherwise deale with the Government Ecclesiastical, but to committ the same to the Arch-Buyshops and Buyshops, and to charge them to have due Regard to see the State of the Church, and the Ministers to be better governed, &c.

LYKEWISE the Queene, by hir owne Letter to the Lord Deputy, blamed hym for propounding the suspension of *Poyning's* Act the last Sessions of Parliament in that Realme: That his two Jorneyes into the *North*, within the Compasse of one Yere, had byn burdenous to the Subjects, and chargeable to the Queene: Allso hir Highnes dislyked the Striffes of late growne betwixt the Lord Deputy and Chancellor of *Ireland*. These with the lyke Complaynts being made unto the Queene and

Coun-

Counsell agaynst the Lord Deputy, and instilled more and more into hir Majestie's Mynd, and hir Privy Counsell, sharpe Letters were written unto hym, not only admonitory, but reprehensive. Which the Lord Deputy receiving, wished hymselfe from that Government; and that he might be revoked, as he wrote unto the Queene and to hir Privy Counsell.

WITHALL there happening an Accident of the Losse of *Dunluse* (which the Deputy had won, and placed a Ward therein at his being in the *North*) he advertised the same unto the Privy Counsell after his Manner. When he first tooke that Pile he placed a Pensioner, called *Peter Cary*, to be Constable of it, with a Ward of xiiij Soldiers, thinking hym to be of the *English* Pale and Race; but afterwards found that he was of the *Carows* in the *North*; he reposing Trust in those of his Contrie and Kyndred, had gotten some of them into hym, and discharged the *English* Soldiers unknownen to the Deputy; two of these having confederated with the Enimies, drew up 50 of them in the Night by Ropes

made of Withies. These having surprised the Castell, assailed a little Tower, wherein the Constable was, and a few with hym; but first offered them Life, and to put them in any Place they would desire (for soe had the Traytors conditioned with them before) but the Constable willing to pay the Price of his Follie, choose rather to forgoe his Life with the Place in very manly Sorte, than to yelde unto any such Conditions, was slayne. Herof the Lord Deputie advertised the Privy Counsell in *England*, by Letters bearing Date from *Dublyn* the xjth of *November* 1585. signifying withall, That it was ill to loose, or let any thinge goe either with *Scottish* or *Irish*, who would soone grow insolent upon a small Cause. In respect wherof his Mynd would serve hym to repayer lost, how small soever he accounted of the Losse; but that he was staied with extreame Want of Money and Victuals to doe any Service withall, or to keepe the Soldiers together in any good sorte, being driven for the Covering of theyr Nakedness to take up Broages and other Thinges upon Credit, which in the

Ende would be but a hard Reckninge for the poore Men. Farther he signified, That finding his Credit shaken, and some thinges that he ment for the best not allowed of, he was fearfull how to attempt any Thing that might be contrary to the Porposes in *England*. Therefore he required some expresse Instructions to be layd downe by hir Majestie, or theyr Lordships, what Course of Government should be taken thence forwards; and the sooner the better, because it was dangerous (if whilst Thinges stood in suspence) the *Irish* should find out the Gapp that was set open for them, and soe snatch away of themselves that which otherwise might in some better sorte be permitted unto them. And if it were thought fitt to let slippe the Hold which was had, the Lord Deputy desired that some other Man might doe it. But during the Time of his Continuance, he would discharge his Dutie the best he might, to satisfie hir Majestie's, and theyr Lordships Expectation, according as he should be directed. And in the meane Season he would keepe Thinges as well as he could in that good Stay they were yet

universally ; how longe soever they would
soe continue.

THESE Crosses happning to the Lord Deputy in his Government, did somewhat discourage hym, yet his Labours were noe lesse than before, and his Successe good, for Peace was still maynteyned in that Contrie ; and now by the Advise of the Counsell, *Christmas* drawing neere, they being not willing to lose the next *Hillary* Terme, did prorogue the Parliament first, untill the 17th of *February* then next following. The Lord Deputie earnestly praying expedit Resolution for the Forne of his Government, and Mayntenance for the same both of Money and Victuall ; wherof it should seeme the Wantes were greate.

ABOUT that Time hir Majestie wrote a Warrant to the Lord Deputie, for taking Surrenders of Mens Estates of Inheritance in *Ireland*, and re-graunting the same to them agayn, to be helde of hir Majestie by Tenure of Knights Service *in Capite*, by
such

Sir John Perrott, Kt. 231

such Part of a Knight's Fee, as to the Lord Deputy should seeme convenient.

AND even shortly after, or about this Time, a Priest, called *Sir Dennis Roughan*, was apprehended for counterfeyting the Lord Deputie's Hand unto certayn Warrants, wherof he was afterwards convicted. Which Warrants were sent over from the Counsell of *Ireland* to the Lords of the Counsell in *England*; with a Letter manifesting the Manner of the Priest's Apprehension, together with the Practise betwixt the sayd Priest, and one *Henry Byrde* herin. Which because it doth discover the dangerous Devises of the sayd *Sir Dennis Roughan*, who afterwards accused the Lord Deputy of Treason after he lefte the Government of *Ireland*, and was the primary, if not the principal Cause of his most lamentable Overthrow and Destruction. Therefore it is not amysse to sett downe the sayd Letter, and the Counterfeyte Warrants, as they were sent over by the Counsell of *Ireland* unto the Lords here, in this sorte.

MAY it please your Honourable Lordships to be advertised, that about the viijth of this Moneth the Arch-Busshop of Cashell apprehended a Priest, called Sir Dennis Roughan, whom he suspected to be a bad Member ; about whom he found certeyn Warrants in the Name of the Lord Deputy, directed to all hir Majestie's Officers within this Realme ; unto which Warrantes the Name of the said Lord Deputy was sette in the usuall Place, appoynted to the Governors of this Lande : His Lordship knowing both by the Generalitie of the Warrantes, and also of the Phrase of Writing thereof, that they were counterfeited. For in one of them was a general Pardon graunted to the sayd Sir Dennis, in the Name of the sayd Lord Deputy without Exception of any Time, as also this hir Majestie's Realme and Counsell here were termed his Realme and Counsell (a dangerous Matter to the Lord Deputy, if he had signed any such Warrant). And the Arch-Busshop of Cashell examining the sayd Priest, Where and of Whom he received the said Warrant. He confessed that Henry Byrd, Deputy Register to the High

Sir John Perrott, Kt. 233

High Commissioners, had written and counterfeited the same. Whereupon the sayd Arch-Buyshop directed his Letters, with the sayd Warrants inclosed to the Lord Deputy, advising his Lordship in Consideration of the Premises to be suer of the sayd Byrd; for that he suspected that in Matters of greate Importance he had played (by counterfeiting his Lordship's Hand) the lyke, or greater Partes. Upon Receipte of these Letters the Lord Deputy directed unto us, the Lord Primate, Sir Henry Wallop and Sir Nicholas White, a Commission to goe, and search the Chamber and Studie of the said Henry Byrd, as also to apprehend hymselfe; who upon his Examination most stoutly denied either the makinge of any such Warrant, or the counterfeiting of the Lord Deputie's Hand. But afterwards (havinge the Warrants severally shewed hym) allthough at the first he denied them all, yet did he at the Length confesse them to be of his Writing; but utterly denied the setting of the Lord Deputie's Hand unto the same. Upon which his manifest Halting (as also for that we found other indirect Dealinges by hym in his Office) we have committed hym to the Castell of Dublin;

lyn; there to remayne untill the Repayer of the sayd Arch-Buysshop with the Priest, to vouch his Accusation Face to Face. Albeit we be sufficiently perswaded of his bad Dealings by sondry Circumstances. In the search of his Chamber and Studie we found divers Writings, as well Letters as others, which are manifest Testimonies of the ill Dealings both of hym, and of his Brother John, in executing of the Charge committed unto them. Of which John's corrupt Usage in the Office we have particular Prooffes. Albeit some of us heretofore have had better Opinion of hym, according to which we then made Certificat unto your Honors. We have farther found in the search of the Writings, a Letter of John Byrde's unto the sayd Henry; with the Coppie of a Supplication exhibited by the sayd John unto your Honors agaynst the Lord Deputy. Perusing the Contents therof, we did not a little marvell at the Impudency of the yonge Man, who farre without Shame had preferred unto soe honorable an Estate Matters of such Untruth. For where he accuseth the Lord Deputy of the giving away of his Office unto one Bedford, his Gentleman Usher, as it were to be dis-

Sir John Perrott, Kt. 235

disposed unto Sale; we of our Knowledges assure your Honors, that the Lord Deputy hath not only not given away the sayd Office to the said Bedford, but also hath barred hym and one Cowicke (who also claymed the Registership of the Prerogative Court) that Interest and Tytle, which they have had graunted unto them in other Governors Times. And hath maynteyned according to your Honors Letters directed unto hym, the sayd Byrde and his Brother in the executing of the sayd Office; but it seemeth by the cunninge Dealing of the sayd John Byrde, who would perswade your Honors that the Lord Deputy accused hym for a Papist, that he feared somethinge that might come to the Lord Deputie's Eare agaynst hym, and therfore goeth about to cleare hymselfe before your Honors of a Fault not yet laied agaynst hym, as farre as we can learne, to prejudicate the Judgmen^t of such Offences wherewith he might justly be charged. For as there never was suspicion of his Religion; soe now appereth his manifest Corruption and Bribery in his Office: Which, as it were, by God's Providence is layed oppen to the stoppinge of soe slaunderous a Course taken

236 *The LIFE of*

ken agaynst the Lord Deputy; who, both with hym and his Brother, dealte soe honourably, as that this John Byrde's underhand Dealinge may justly of every one be condemned, as by the sayd Henry's Letters unto the Lord Deputy, may appear to your Lordships. The Consideration of which Things we leave unto your Honors, whose Wisdomes can see into the Inconveniencies that will proceed, if private Persons can be suffered for the Preferment of theyr owne suites, to fall into slaundering of the cheife Magistrate appoynted by hir Majestie in this Realme. And soe with our humble Duties we ende. At Dublyn the xxiiijth of December 1585.

Subscribed

Your Honors humbly at Commandment,

John Kyllmoren, Henry Wallope, Robert Dyllon, Jo. Sumachen, Nicholas White, Lucas Dillon, Edward Waterhouse.

Edward Brabson. Tho. Le Strange.

WITH

WITH this Letter was sent the Copie of the counterfeite Warrants. scil.

WE Greete you well. Forasmuch as this Bearer Sir Dennis Roughan, Priest, having byn apprehended, and committed to Prison of a longe Time for speciall Causes as well Temporall as Spirituall repugninge to his Highnes Lawes, hath now recanted from the erroneous Religion of Papistry, which he hath professed (as under his Hand Writing may appere) and having submitted hymselfe unto hir Majestie's Statutes and Ordinances, hath sworn to the Supremacy, with Promise henceforwards to become a trew and loyall Subject. These are therefore to give you to understand, that we have freely pardoned, forgiven, and sett free the sayd Sir Dennis from all Misdemeanors, and bad Actions, whatsoever by hym hertofore committed, upon hope of his good Services, and better Conformitie. And have also licensed hym to travell about his Affayrs thorowout this our Realme of Ireland, willinge and commanding all of you, to whom in Case it may apperteyn, to suffer
and

238 *The L I F E of*

and permitte the sayd Sir Dennis to passe and repasse thorowout your Citties, Townes, and Countries, without any Molestation, Troubles, or Arrestes; he behavinge hymselfe lyke a dutiful Subject; unlesse you shall receive speciall Direction from us, or any of our Counsell for the same. Wherof you may not fayle, as you shall answer to the contrary at your extreame Perills; and this shall be your Warrant. Given at the Castell of Dublyn the xxvijth of June, 1585.

Directed thus:

*To all and singuler Maiors, Sheriffes, So-
veraignes, Baylies, Sheneshalls, Con-
stables, Captaynes, Portrives, Heborons,
Searchers, Comptrollers, and all other
hir Majestie's Officers and lovinge Sub-
jects, to whom it shall apperteyne:*

THERE were also two other coun-
terfeyt Warrants found with the sayd
Sir Dennis, wherto the Lord Deputie's
Hand was put and counterfeyted as afore-
sayd. The one was to bynd all such Per-
sons

sons in Recognifances, as the sayd Sir *Dennis* should represent upon his Corporal Oath, that he stood in bodily Fear of, that they should not misuse, hurte, or indanger hym. The other was to attach and apprehend the Bodies of certayn Priestes and other Persons, such as were undernamed in that Warrant : All which counterfeyt Warrants thus contrived and confessed, the Counsell of *Ireland* send over to the Privy Counsell in *England* ; who being advertised of these bad Practises, and other the lyke false Accusations and leud Dealinges devised agaynst the Lord Deputy, they wrote a Letter unto hym touchinge some former Complayntes of the Miscarriage of some in the Pale at the first Session of Parliament, authorising hym to examyn and punish the sayd Offenders to this Effect.

“ THAT whereas hir Majestie found
“ by many Examinations, that some of
“ those who impugned the Suspension of
“ *Poyning's* Act, have not only given out
“ in the last Session of Parliament helde
“ in that Realme, very ill and unseamely
“ Speeches

“ Speaches agaynst the sayd Suspension;
“ as a Thing that carried some secret
“ Intent tending greatly to the Preju-
“ dice of the Subjectes of that Realme,
“ but also have practised in a kind of
“ seditious sorte in the time out of the
“ Session of Parliament, to render (by
“ giving out false and malicious Bruite)
“ your Lordship hatefull to the Subjectes
“ of that Realme; who therefore respect-
“ ing the Natures of those ill-disposed
“ Persons, that under Pretence of theyr
“ Liberty of Speache in Parliament, as
“ otherwise, by giving out of seditious
“ Bruites, have greatly abused them-
“ selves : Therefore hir Majestie’s Plea-
“ sure was, that the Lord Deputy and
“ the Counsell should call the Persons
“ charged by the sayd Examinations, to
“ charge them with theyr ill Demeanors
“ and undutifull Speaches, and to con-
“ front them with such as testified agaynst
“ them. After this done, to extend such
“ Punishment upon those that shall be,
“ by sufficient Testimony, found faltie, as
“ by his Lordship, with the Assent of the
“ Counsell there, should be found meete.

THIS

THIS did somewhat salve the Credite, and satisfie the Mynd of the Lord Deputy, by giving Order to punish the disorderly Persons, to purge hym of theyr Suggestions; and therby to pacifie and avoyd such future Inconveniences. And about this time, after the Returne of *Sir Valentyn Browne*, upon the Consideration of the Survey by hym and others made of the Landes lately escheated in *Mounster*, hir Majestie resolved to dispose of the same unto divers of hir Subjects that would inhabit, and manure the same.

To that Ende, this hir Majestie's Pleasure was signified (by hir Privy Counsell of *England*) unto the Lord Deputy, that he should (as soone as conveniently he could) make the Noblemen and Gentlemen of the Pale acquaynted with hir Highnes sayd Intention, tending to the Benefit of the whole Realme; and in case any of them would be content to take any Portion of the sayd escheated Landes, upon such Conditions as the *English*-borne Subjects should doe, he might assure them

R

that

that hir Majestie was as well affected to the loyall and dutifull Subjects of that hir Realme, as to any of hir other Subjects. Which Direction bearing Date by Letters the 12th of *December*, 1585. was seconded and supplied with farther Instructions sent by Secretary *Fenton*, who shortly after returned in *Ireland*, and who whilst he remayned in *England*, did the Lord Deputy noe great good Offices.

ALSO by this time much Unkindness burst out betwixt the Lord Deputy and the Lord Chancellor of *Ireland*, partly about publick Causes, and somewhat for private Matters concerninge the Church Living of *St. Patrick's*, which at the Lord Deputie's going over was lefte in his Instructions, as a principall Meanes to be converted for the Ereccion of a New Colledg in *Dublyn*, which the Lord Deputy had a great Desire to sett forwards, but the Lord Chancellor being interested in the Livings of *St. Patrick's* by longe Leases and other Estates therof graunted either to hymselfe, his Children
or

Sir John Perrott, Kt. 243

or Kinsmen, did by all Meanes withstand the Alienation of that Livinge, and being otherwise a Man of a high Spirite, accostomed to beare sway in that Government, grew into Contradiction, and from Contradiction unto Contention with the Lord Deputie; who, on the other side, brooking no such Opposition, it grew to some Harte-burning and Heate betwixt them, wherof the Queene takinge Notice, wrote Letters both unto the Lord Chancellor, and to the Lord Deputy. To the Lord Chancellor in this sorte,

RIGHT Reverend Father in God, Right Trustie and Well-beloved, we greete you well. As we have allredy written to our Deputy of that our Realme, touching our greate Mislyke of certayne Unkindnes and Disagrement growen of late betwen hym and you, being our Chancellor there: soe have we thought it noe lesse convenient herewith to admonish you allso of the sayd Matter. It cannot be unknowen to you what greate Inconvenience may grow by the Emulation and Discord of two such principall Officers,

R 2

ficers, as we have appoynted you to be there! A Thing that apparently must needs draw on dangerous Faction and Mischiefe to the Hinderance of our whole Service in that Place. We cannot but finde greate Cause to mislyke herof, not certaynly knowinge whom to blame most. But as we have written playnly herof to our Deputy; soe in respect of your Callinge and Functiō, We cannot but put you in Remembrance, that you should have born with our Deputy, being our principall and chief Officer of that Realme, though the Causes of your Variances had not byn fully equall. Wherby our Service might have received the better Fartherance; but the contrary having fallen out to our greate Mislyking, We thought it necessary (as We have done to our Deputy) to admonish you lykewise therof. And withall to charge you, as you tender our Favor, to give no Cause of any farther Variance betwixt you; but in good and friendly Order (the rather for your Vocation) to reconcile yourselves together, soe as, drawinge in one Line, our Service may receive as much Fartherance by your good Accord herafter, as it was lykely to have received Hinderance her-

Sir John Perrott, *Kt.* 245

hertofore by the contrary. Which our good Pleasure, We require, and charge you forthwith upon the Receipt of these our Letters to accomplish accordingly, &c.

By this Princely Admonition, the Queene thought to perswade the Lord Chancellor of *Ireland* to shunne Contention with the Lord Deputy; but it would not prevayle; for he did persist in that Course of Opposition during the Lord Deputie's Government. And now was Secretary *Fenton*, who had continued here in *England* for a good Time (doeing few good Offices for the Lord Deputy) come into *Ireland* with divers Dispatches from the Queene and hir Counsell. Wherin amongst other Things there were some Restraynts of the Lord Deputie's Authority and Allowances; besydes some Intimations of Dislykes signified from the Queene and Counsell of *England*, that the Lord Deputy had assumed unto hymselfe; wherewith the Lord Deputie being made acquainted, found hymselfe aggrieved, and to purge hymselfe of these Imputations, he wrote a Letter unto the

Queene after this Manner, and in these Wordes.

MA Y it please your Most Excellent Majesty, by such Letters and Instructions, as Geffrie Fenton, your Majestie's Secretary here, hath brought me, I finde your Majestie's Misyke of my Proceedings in this your Highnes Service, and withall such Restraymentes of the Authority of this Place, as doe make seame to others noe lesse unable and unworthy of the same, than I have ever conceived myselfe to be. A Matter that would be greatly to my Discomfort, if I knew not that your Majestie should be my Judge, to Whom I doe appeale, and have only vowed my Service. And accordingly will apply my best Indevors to follow your Majestie's Directions and Commandments now sent, humbly submitting myselfe to your Majestie's Opinion, without producinge for the present any Parte of your Majestie's, or of your Counsell's former Allowance of me, and of my Doeinges, or any Thinge else that I thinke in myne owne Defence (for Matter or Length) be troublesome to your Majestie in these Times of your Majestie's

jestie's other most waightie Affayres. Neverthelessse having had a Will to doe for the best in your Majestie's Service, it would grieve me that the Malice of any should prevayle soe much, as to draw your Majestie (before my Answer) into a harder Opinion of my Actions, than I perswade myselfe they doe deserve ; beinge able, for some of the greatest of the same, to produce Testimony and Allowance under the Handes of all your Majestie's Counsell of this State, whether they be here or there. Howsoever it may be, that some doe underhand now impugne the same ; but neither justifyinge myselfe agaynst your Majestie's Censure, nor givinge Place to any Misinformation, I humbly beseech your Highnes License for my Accessse to your Majestie's Presence after the Dissolution of this Parliament, upon hazard to incurre your Highnes Indignation, (which I would not have for all the World) if I doe not both disprove any that shall goe abouts to accuse me, or taxe me and myn Actions unto your Majestie : And allso to approve the same at the least excusable, if not justifiable, and myselfe to have byn as carefull as should become me of your Honor, and more of your Proffitt than

of myn owne, which the End of the Accounts will ever shew, whatsoever is in that Behalf reprov'd to your Majestie. But least happily this private Cause (thoe it doe most waighly import me) may not be thought Matter sufficient enough for my Repayer thither. May it please your Majestie to understand, that there be other Matters of greater Waight than these I am charged with, upon which the Good of this State, together with your Majestie's Proffitt may soe much depend, as I think them fitter to be deliver'd by myselfe than committed to Paper, or to any Man's Speech besydes. And to the Ende somewhat else may fall out for your Majestie's Honor, and the surer Settlinge of this Government, I would thinke, if it may be lykinge to your Majestie, that I may be able to bringe with me the Erles of Tyrone, Clanricard and Clancarty, O-Neale, Odonnell, Maguire, Ochane, Mac-Mahon, Sir Morough Nedo, O-Burcke, Feaugh Mac Hugh, the Chiefe of the O-Conors, and some other the Chiefe of the Septes in this Realme; and I thinke Sorleboy allso. All, or most of those, and some other, have by theyr severall Letters and Messages made Offers
(and

Sir John Perrott, Kt. 249

(and some of them earnest Requestes) unto me in that Behalfe. Soe allthough I dare not assure any Thinge on theyr Wordes, yet I might perswade myselfe they will performe it, if either they have not hearde that my Credite (which hath byn hitherto some Stay upon them) is abated, or that there be not some Practises to chaunge theyr Myndes. For the Performance wherof, I beseech your Majestie to exacte a Secrecy, as you will impart herewith. It is lyke inough the carryinge over of these Men will divert the Spanish Porposes, if any be agaynst this Land; especially if the same have any Combination with these, or any other the Chiefetaynes of this Realme. For your Majestie havinge these Lordes there, the Spaniards may have small Hope to be any way healped, or ayded by theyr People. At the worst (to have soe many of them there, as never any of your noble Progenitors had) your Majestie may draw of them any Conclusion that may be most profittable to your Majestie, and the Service of this State. And because most of them be Lordes of Cattell, but not of much Money, May it please your Majestie, that 3000 l. may be redie at the Water's-side, to
be

250 *The LIFE of*

be distributed among them for the defrayinge of theyr Charges ; and Order shall be taken, that your Majestie's Victualler shall have the same answered in Beefes, for the Use of your Majestie's Garrisons, at Rates profittable to your Majestie. And soe leavinge all to your most gracious Consideration, I humbly ende, beseeching God longe to blesse and preserve your Highness with most happy Raigne. Dublin the 12th of Aprill 1586.

Your Majestie's,

Most Faithfull Subject and Humble Servant,

JOHN PERROTT.

IN this Letter it is manifest how hardly the Lord Deputy helde hymselfe to be dealt withal, by Misinformation and Miscontent, how desirous he was to be removed from his Government, and how willing to bring with hym into *England* the chiefe Lords of *Ireland* ; who, if they had come, would have brought much Benefit to the State ; and it is lykely, that such
Courses

Sir John Perrott, Kt. 251

Courses might have byn settled (if they had come over) at theyr being in *England*, as might have planted Peace, and a more certayne Civill Government in that Nation ever after ; but the Lord Deputy was not suffered then to come, or to bring over those *Irish* Lords ; either because his Service was thought soe necessary there at that Time, as he could not be spared thence ; or else for that some thought it too greate an Honor for hym to accomplish such Services as could have byn then performed.

Now the xxvjth of *Aprill* 1586. the Lord Deputy began the second Session of Parliament at *Dublyn*, which had byn prorogued from *May* the Yere before untill this Time ; and this Session was continued untill the xiiijth Day of the next Moneth of *May* followinge ; in which Parliament there was this Statute inacted, as will appere by the Booke of Statutes, now extant in Printe, in relation to the Attainder of *JAMES*, Viscount *BALTINGLAS*, in the following Wordes.

An

An ACT for the Attainder of *JAMES EUSTACE*, late Viscount of *BALTINGLAS*, and Others, in a Parliament held in *IRELAND* under the Government of Sir *JOHN PERROTT*, Knt. began 16th *Aprill*, and closed 14th *May*, *Anno xxviiijth Elizab. Regin. Anno Dom. MDLXXXVI.*

If their most humble wise beseechen your most Excellent Majestie, the Lordes Spiritual and Temporall, and all o^rther your lovinge and obedient Subjectes, the Commons in this your most High Court of Parliament Assembled, That whereas *JAMES*, late Viscount of *BALTINGLAS*; *EDMOND EUSTACE*, *THOMAS EUSTACE*, *WALTER EUSTACE*, and *RICHARD EUSTACE*, Brethren to the sayde late Viscount, most falsly and trayterously, some of them by open Rebellion in diverse Partes of your Majesties Realme of *IRELAND*, and others by sundrie Confederacies, Combinations and Conspiracies, and other overt Facts, have committed, perpetrated, and done many detestable and abominable Treasons agaynst your Highnesse, to the greate Pe-
rill

kill and Daunger of the utter Destruction and
Ouerthrowe of the good Estate and publike
Peace of this your Highnesse said Realme of
IRELAND, if God of his infinite Goodnesse
had not in due time opened and revealed to
your Highnesse theyr trayterous Intentes and
Purposes, and discomfited them in the same ;
of, and for which Treasons being most mani-
fest and apparent, some of the said Traytours
and Offendours before-named have beene and
are lawfully, and by due Processe outlawed,
and thereby justly attainted, and some of them
have beene, and are justly and lawfully con-
victed and attaynted by Tryall of the Contrie
accordyng to the Lawes of this your sayde
Realme of IRELAND, as by the Recordes
of their sefveral Indictments and Attaindours
more plainely it doth, and may appeare, and
for the which sefveral Offences some of the
sayde Offendours have suffered Paynes of death
accordyng to their demerites : It may there-
fore please your Highnesse of your most graci-
ous and accustomed Goodnesse, and for the en-
tire Love, Favour, and heartie Affection, that
your Majestie hath always heretofore borne,
and yet beareth to the Commonwealth of this
your sayde Realme of IRELAND, and for
the good Preservation of your most Excellent
Majesties Government of the same, and of the
good Peace, Unitie, and Rest of all us your
most bounden and obedient Subjects thereof, to
graunt

graunt and assent, at the humble Suite and Petition of your sayde lovinge and obedient Subjectes the Lords Spirituall and Temporall, and the Commons in this present Parliament assembled, that all and every of the said Convictions, Outlawries, and Attaindours of all and every the said Offendours may be approved, and confirmed by the Authoritie of this present Parliament. And bee it Enacted, that the same Convictions, Outlawries, and Attaindours, and every of them shall bee and remaine sufficient and effectual in Lawe to all Intents, Constructions, and Purposes, any Errour, Insufficiencie, or other Defect in Foyme or Matter in them, or any of them to the contrary notwithstandinge. And that it may bee further Enacted by the Authoritie aforesaid, That as well the said JAMES, late Viscount of BALTINGLAS, and all other the saide Offendours, and Persons before-named, as all such others who by actual Rebellion and other trayterous Practices, most trayterously and abominably have committed like abominable and detestable Treason and Rebellion, and have dyed, and been slaine in their actual Rebellion and Treasons, or otherwise beene by Partial Lawe executed for the same, and every of them for their sayde abominable and detestable Treasons by them, and everie of them most abominably and traiterously committed, perpetrated, and done agaynst your Highnesse, and this your said Realme

Realme of IRELAND, shall bee by Authority of this present Parliament convicted and attainted of High Treason. And that as many of the said Offendours and Persons before-named as bee yet in Life and not pardoned for the same, shall and may at your Highnesses Will and Pleasure suffer Paynes of Death, as in Cases of High Treason. And that the said JAMES, late Viscount of BALTINGLAS, and eberie other of the said Offendours, and Persons attainted before-named, as well such of them, as bee yet in Life, as also such of them as bee put to Execution for their sayde Treasons, or otherwyle dyed, beene slaine or executed by Martiall Lawe as is aforesayd, shall lose and forfeit to your Highnesse, and to your Heyres and Successours, all and ebery such Honours, Castles, Manours, Messuages, Landes, Tenementes, Rents, Reversions, Remainders, Possessions, Rightes, Conditions, Interestes, Offices, Fees, Annuities, and all other thei? Hereditamentes, Goods, Chattells, Debts, and other Thinges of whatsoeber Names, Natures, or Qualities they bee, which they the said Offendours and Persons before-named, or any of them had, to their, or any of their Use or Uses, or which any other had to their, or any of their Uses the Day of the said seberal Treasons by them, or any of them committed, perpetrated, or done, or at any time sithence. And that all and singular the said Honours, Castles, Manors, Messuages,

256 *The LIFE of*

luages, Landes, Tenementes, Rents, Reber-
 sions, Remainders, Possessions, Rights, Con-
 ditions, Fees, Annuities, and all other Here-
 ditaments, Goods, Chatels, Debtes, and other
 the Premisses, shall bee deemed, vested, and
 judged to bee in the actual and real Possession
 of your Majestie, without any Office, or In-
 quisition thereof hereafter to be taken or found,
 savinge to all and every Person and Persons,
 Bodiees politike and corporate, and to their Heyres
 and Successours, and to the Heyres, Successours,
 and Assignes of every of them (other than the
 sayde JAMES, late Viscount of BALTIN-
 GLAS, and other the said Offendors and Per-
 sons attainted before-named, and their Heyres
 and the Heyres of every of them, clayming any
 thing in the said Honours, Castles, Manors,
 Messuages, Landes, Tenements, and other the
 Premisses, or any part thereof, as Heyre or
 Heyres to and from them, or any of them, and
 all and every other Person and Persons claym-
 ing or having any thing in the said Honours,
 Castles, Manors, Messuages, Landes, Tene-
 ments, and other the Premisses, or any part
 thereof to their Uses, or the Use of some or any
 of them, or to the Use of any their said Heyres)
 all such Right, Title, Use, Possession, Inte-
 rest, Reversions, Remainders, Entre, Condi-
 tion, Fees, Offices, Rentes, Annuities, Leases,
 Commons, Action, Suite, Petition, Execu-
 tion, and all other Hereditaments, and all Acti-
 ons

ons and Meanes to recouer oꝝ obtaine the same whatsoeber, which they oꝝ any of them had oꝝ ought to have in the Premisses oꝝ any part thereof, at oꝝ before the said severall Treasons by the saide severall Offendours committed oꝝ done, in as large and ample Manner to all Intents and Purposes, as if this Act had never beene had oꝝ made, any thing therein conteyned to the contrarie thereof notwithstanding.

Provided alwayes, and nebertheles be it Enacted by the Authoritie aforesaid, that this Act oꝝ any thing contayned, shall not in any wise extend to make voyd any Graunt, Gift, Lease, or Demise made by our said Soberaigne Lady the Queene of any of the said Manors, Lands, Tenements oꝝ Hereditaments to any Person oꝝ Persons by Letters Patents under the great Seale of Ireland, at any time oꝝ times sithence the sayd Treasons committed, but that the same Lessees and Patentees, their Heyres, Executors, and Assignes shall and may have, hold, and enjoy all and eberie the Lands, Tenements, Hereditaments and other things whatsoeber past and named to be past in the said Letters Patents, according to the severall Estate and Estates limited and specified in the same, and under such Reservations, Covenantes, Conditions and other Limitations and Articles as are in such Letters Patents comprised and expresse, aswell against the Queenes Majestie, her Heyres and Successoures, as against all and
S every

every other Person and Persons, their Heires and Successours whatsoever.

And bee it also further Enacted, that this Act or anie thing contayned, shall not in any wise extend to take away or make bolde any pardon heretofore made or graunted to the sayde Persons and Offenders or any of them before in this Act mentioned, eyther by Proclamation sent from her Majestie out of England, according to the Contentes of the said Proclamation, or by her Highnesse Letters Patents under the great Seale of this Realme, but that the sayd Persons and every of them to whom any such Pardon is, or hath been granted, shall and may have and take the Advantage and Benefite of everie such Pardon and all things therein contained in as large and ample Manner, as they or any of them should, might or ought to have done, if this Act had never beene had or made, any thing in this Act contayned to the contrarie thereof in any wise notwithstanding.

And whereas it hath been, and is very much bruited and published abroad, and by sundry Persons pretended, that divers & many of the said Rebels and Persons before-mentioned to be attainted, and named in this present Act and other Records of the said severall Attaindoers, after they had intended and purposed to enter into their ungodly and diabolish Practise of Rebellion and Treason, did make divers secret and fraudulent Estates and Conveyances of their Lands,
Tene-

Tenementes, Uses and Hereditaments, to the Intent thereby to defraude the Queenes Majestie of such Forfeitures of their Landes, Tenements, Uses and Hereditamentes as her Highnesse by reason of their severall Treasons should be entitled to have: And forasmuch as the said pretended fraudulent Estates and Conveyances are yet kept secret and not openly published, and in time to come may be very dangerous and likely to tend to disinherite the Queenes Majestie, her Heires, Successours and Assignes of their Estate and Interest in such Lands, Tenements and Hereditamentes, as her Majestie and her Assignes now have or ought to have by reason of the said Attainders, or of this present Act, unlesse some Provision be made that such secret Estates, Conveyances and Assurances may in due and convenient time be openly published and brought to light: For remedie whereof, be it Enacted by Authoritie of this present Parliament, that every Person and Persons, their Heires and Assignes, which have, hath, or claymeth to have any Estate of Inheritance, Lease, Use or Rent not already entred of Record, or certified into the Queenes Majesties Court of Exchequer in this Realme of IRELAND, of, in, or to any Manors, Landes, Tenementes, Uses, or Hereditaments by any Graunt, Assurances or Conveyances whatsoever, had, made, or done by any of the said Rebels and Persons before in this present Act named and mentioned to bee

attaynted, or by any seyled to anie of their Use or Uses at any time sithence the Death of ROLAND, late Viscount of BALTINGLAS, and Father to the said JAMES, and the rest before named; viz. from the last Day of March in the twentieth Yeare of the Reaigne of our said most gracious Soberaigne Lady that now is, shall within one Yeare next ensuing the making of this Act, openly shew and bring forth, or cause to be shewed and brought forth into the Queenes Majesties said Court of Exchequer, the same his or their Graunt, Conveyance and Assurance which he or they have or hath, or pretendeth to have, of, in or to any the said Mannours, Landes, Tenements, Uses or Hereditaments, and there in the Terme time shall offer and exhibite the saide Graunt, Conveyance and Assurance, to be entred and enrolled of Record, or else every such Graunt, Conveyance and Assurance so had and made by any of the sayde Rebels and Persons before in this present Act named & mentioned to be attainted, or by any other seyled to any of their Use or Uses, and not so brought into the said Court of Exchequer, and there exhibited within the Yeare aforesaid, shall be utterly voyde and of none Effect to all Intents and Purposes: any thing in the same Conveyance contayned to the contrarie notwithstanding.

And be it further Enacted by the Authoritie aforesaid, that the Treasurer, Chancellor and

W^a

Barons of the said Court of the Exchequer, or any of them, upon every such offering and exhibiting of any such Graunt, Conveyance and Assurance hereafter in Forme aforesaid to bee made, shall forthwith cause the same offer to bee entred of Record, and shall likewise cause the same Conveyance and Assurance in the same Court to bee entred and enrolled of Record, without any Fee or Reward to be taken or had of the Partie for the doing thereof. And after such Offer made and recorded, it shall and may be lawfull for everie Person which hereafter shall so exhibite and offer any such Graunt, Conveyance and Assurance in the said Court of Exchequer, at his Libertie and Pleasure at all times within one Yeare then next following, to produce and bring before the said Treasurer, Barons, and Chauncellor, such Testimonie, Proofs and Witnesses into the said Court of Exchequer, there to be examined, as he can, for the better Proofs of the said Graunt and Assurance to be made (bona fide) and without anie Fraud or Co-
bin. And yet neverthelesse, if at any time after, upon any Information upon that Cause, or other Information to be preferred and exhibited into the said Court of the Exchequer, for and upon the Behalfe of our said Soberaign Lady the Queene, her Heyres or Successours, or upon any Occasion upon the Cause or Suite to bee prosecuted by any the Patentees of the Quenes Majestie, her Heyres or Successours,

or by any the Heyres or Assignees of any of the same Patentees, it shall happen to bee sufficiently tryed and proved by verdict of twelve Men, according to the common Course of the Lawes of this Realme, that any of the said Estates, Assurances and Conveyances made by any of the saide Rebels and Persons before in this Act named and mentioned to be attainted, was made upon any Fraude or Cobin, to the Intent thereby to defraude the Queenes Majestie of such Forfeitures as might have growen or comen to her Highnesse by reason of any of the said Attaindours: That then every such Estate, Conveyance and Assurance so tryed and sufficiently proved as aforesaid, to be had and made by and upon such Fraude or Cobin, shall be utterly voyde and of none Effect to all Intents, Constructions and Purposes, untill such time as such Tryall be lawfully undone by Attaint or otherwise: any thing in the sayde Conveyances to the contrarie therrof in any wise notwithstanding. Saving to all and every Person and Persons and Bodies politicke and corporat, their Heyres and Successours, and to the Heyres and Successours of every of them, (other then such Persons and their Heyres as be or have beene Parties or partie to any Estates or Conveyances made by Fraude or Cobin as is aforesaid, and other then such as shall not exhibite, offer, and shew forth their saide Graunts, Conveyances and Assurances in the said Court of Exchequer within the
time

time to them before in this Act limited) all such Estate, Right, Title and Interest as they or any of them have, of, in, or to any of the saide Mannours, Landes, Tenementes, Uses and Hereditamentes, or any Parcell thereof, in as large and ample Manner and Forme to all Intents and Purposes, as if this Act had never beene had or made.

Provided alwayes, that this Act or any thing therein contained, shall not extend to any Lease of Landes, Tenementes or Hereditaments most commonly used to be letten to ferme for Yeares or Libes within the space of twentie Yeares before the making of the same Lease, and not exceeding the Terme of twentie one Yeares or three Libes from the time of the making of the same Lease, and whereupon the usuall accustomed yearly Rent or more is reserved, nor to any Estate by Copie of any Land or Tenements made according to the Custome of any Mannour whereof the same is parcell.

And where the said JAMES, late Viscount of BALTINGLAS, or some or any of them at the time of the said Treasons committed and done, were and stood seised of any Mannours, Landes, Tenementes and Hereditamentes to the Use of any other Person or Persons, Bodies politique or corporate, not being attainted of Treason, and not to their or any of their owne Uses or behoofe: Bee it further Provided and Enacted by the Authoritie of this

present Parliament, that all and euerie such other Person or Persons, Bodies politique and corporate, to whose Use or Uses the said JAMES, late Viscount of BALTINGLAS, and other the Persons in or by this Act before named and mentioned to be attainted, or some, or any of them were so seised as is aforesaid, the Day of the said feberall Treasons committed, or at any time sithence, and the Heyres and Assignes of euerie such other Person and Persons, shall and may from time to time enter into the same Manors, Landes, Tenementes, and Hereditamentes, and euerie or any part thereof, aswell upon the Possession of our said Soberaigne Ladie the Queenes Majestie, her Heires and Successours, as of any other Person or Persons, and thereupon make and execute all and euerie such Estates thereof to any other Person or Persons, and to such Uses and Intentes, as they might have done, if the said Attaindour or Attaindours had never beene had or made. And as touching such Manors, Landes, Tenementes and Hereditamentes, whereof the saide JAMES, late Viscount of BALTINGLAS, and others the Offenders and Persons before in or by this Act named and mentioned to be attainted, or some or anie of them were joyntly seised together with any other Person or Persons to the Use of any other Person or Persons not being attainted of Treason the Day of the said feberall Treasons committed,

or

or at any time thence, that the same other Person or Persons with whom the said Offendours and Persons in this Act named and mentioned to bee attainted, or some or any of them were so jointly seised as is aforesaide, shall stand and bee seised of the same whole Manors, Landes, Tenementes, and Hereditamentes, and of ebery part thereof, to such Uses and Intentes, as they were so jointly seised the Day of the sayde seuerall Treasons committed, the said Attaindours notwithstanding, as though the sayde Offendours and other the Persons in this Act before named and mentioned to bee attainted, or any of them, had never had any Estate of, or in the said Manors, Landes, Tenementes, or Hereditamentes.

And be it further Enacted by the Authoritie aforesayde, that all and eberie Offendour and Offendours, being hereafter lawfully convicted of any Manner of High Treason by any Act of Parliament, Presentment, Confession, Verdict or Proces of Outlawry according to the due Course and Custome of the common Lawes or Statutes of this Realme, shall lose and forfeite to the Queenes Majestie, her Heires and Successours, aswell all such Rightes, Entries and Conditions, as also all such Landes, Tenementes, and Hereditamentes which any such Offendour or Offendours shall have of any Estate of Inheritance in Use or Possession by any Right, Title or Meanes within this Realme
of

266 *The LIFE of*

of IRELAND, or elsewhere within any the Dominions of the same Realme, at the time of any such Treason committed, or at any time after. And that everie such Attaindour according to the Course of the Common Lawes or Statutes of this Realme, shall bee of as good Force, Value, and Effect, as if it had beene done by Authoritie of Parliament. And that the Queenes Maiestie, her Heyres and Successours, shall bee deemed and adjudged in actuall and reall Possession of all such Landes, Tenementes, Uses, Hereditamentes, Goodes, Chattels and all other Things of the Offendour, and Offendours so attainted, without any Office or Inquisition to bee found of the same: any Law, Statute, Custome or Use to the contrarie in any wise notwithstanding. Saving to everie Person and Persons, their Heyres and Successours (other than the Offendours in any Treasons, their Heyres and Successours and such Person and Persons as claime to any of their Uses) all such Rightes, Titles, Interests, Possessions, Leases, Rentes, Offices and other Profites, which they shall have at the Day of the committing such Treasons heereafter to bee committed or at any Time afoze, in as large and ample Manner as if this Act had never beene had, or made.

AFTER

AFTER this Parliament was ended, the Lord Deputie did adresse hymselfe to settle the Contrie in Quietnes, and to compose the Contentions arising betwixt the Lords of the Contries ; for shortly he went into *Westford* to visit the Contrie, and to heare the Complayntes of Persons agreed.

ABOUT this Time there landed a greate Number of *Red Shankes* in *Conaugh* to the Number of 1600, whom *Sir Richard Bingham*, Governor of *Conaugh*, did affront as well as he could at the first with the Contrie Forces ; and when they passed by he caused the Companies to coaste after them, untill they came to a Place called *Ardenry* ; but did not incounter them all this whiles from theyr Land, being the last of *August* 1586. untill the foure and twentieth of the next Month ; before which time the Lord Deputie sent unto the Governor 400 Foote and 60 Horse, with which, and the Provinciaall Power, he grew to be above 800 Foote, and 100 Horse.
When

When the Provinciall Forces were joyned with the Ayde sent from the Lord Deputy (who followed after as fast as he could) the Governor as soon as he was strengthened with this Supplie, marched on all Night, and came the next Morninge on the Enimies unexpected, where-with they were soe amazed being so-daynly surprised and valiantly assaulted, that they betooke themselves to Flight, almost without any Fight at all, and they were so invironed, that they could escape noe Way; but were forced to leap into the River of *Ardenry*, where almost all were drowned that escaped the Sword.

THE Lord Deputie was by this time come on as farre as *Roscommon*, and hearing of this discomfetur, wished he had byn at the Service, and perchance was not well pleased, that the Honor therof was taken from hym by the Governor, to whom he had sent Forces, wherby that Service was principally achived. Then the Lord Deputie finding it not needefull to goe farther (when the Enimie was overthrowen) went only to Galloway,
where

where he remayned some tene Dayes, to hear the Contries Causes decyded, and soe returned agayne to *Dublyn*, composinge Controversies and hearing Complaynts as he went.

At this time the olde *O-Neale Turlough Lenough* growinge aged, and very unweildie, when he returned from the Parliament, the more conformable he shewed hymselfe to obey the State, the lesse Obedience his own People shewed towards hym : The People of those Partes little regarding Governors that are obedient to the Prince, or unable to leade theyr stirringe Spirites in such Actions, as they were inured withall. Which he findinge, and not knowing how to amend his Estate otherwise, was content to enter into Composition with the Erle of *Tyrone*.

ARTICLES of Agreement betwixt *Turlough Lenough* and the Erle of *Tyrone* were the rather condiscended to by the Lord Deputy and Counsell of *Ireland*, because they thought it a good Meane

Meane to abolish the Title and Power of *O-Neale* in *Ulster*, who because they had byn Princes of that Province, as long as the Name remayned, they thought the Dignitie and Prerogative must ever follow; to extinguish which Opinion, and Operation of that Opinion, the Erle of *Tyrone* did then undertake to suppress (upon the Assumption of this Stile and Partition.) And soe for that Time a Peace and Unitie was procured betwixt the Lords of *Ulster*, that Contrie quieted, and the Composition maynteyned; yet *Turlough Lenough* had no sooner concluded these Conditions, but he began to repent his Bargayne, as beinge sensible of the least Losse, allthough it were of such Things as hymselfe knew he was not well able to holde; and soe shortly after would sometimes say, *They had put up a Whealpe, which they should not be able to pull down soe easily*; meaning the Erle of *Tyrone*, whose aspiring Mynde *Turlough Lenough* knew by former Experience as well in the Erle as in hymselfe, and the rest of theyr Kynd in that Contrie, whose Condition is never to re-

regard any Thing except they have all they desire.

THE Lord Deputy thus busying hymselfe as much as might be, to plante Peace in that Kingdom wherin he governed: The more he fought it, and prevayled in his Indevors, the more he was malic'd there by the Governors; and the more he was beloved amongst the People whom he governed for procuring them Peace, and defending them from Injuries, the more secret Adversaries he had of such as could, or would doe hym most Hurte. Yet he did still goe on with his Courtes, and keepe the Contrie in greate Quietnes. For amongst other Meanes wherby he did accomplish the same, his Manner was to heare all theyr Complaynts indifferently, knowing and considering, that the Concealement of Wrongs, and the keeping backe of juste Complaynts is the greatest Imputation of Injustice that may be in a Governor, and the greatest Cause of Griefe and Discontentment that the governed can receive; and if they being hearde doe complayne

playne without iuste Cause, there is iust Cause they should be hearde. Which Rule the Lord Deputy did ever observe, and amongst many other we shall instance one Example. There was about this time a grievous Complaynt made agaynst Sir *Henry Harington*, Knight, by some of the *Clanns*, over whom he governed; and this Information being delivered by writing unto the Lord Deputy at Sir *Henry Harington's* Howse what Time the Lord Deputy was there, and received great Intertaynment of hym. At his Departure he called Sir *Henry* unto hym, and told hym (as hymselfe reported) “ Sir *Henry* (quoth he) you know I love you well, and you have made me exceeding good Intertaynment; but there is an Information of many foule Matters delivered agaynst you, and therefore as well as I doe love you, if you doe not disprove it, you shall be sure to smart for it. Prepare to answer it in *Dublyn* at the *Starre Chamber* by such a Day, where it shall be publickly hearde.” At the Day appoynted, both *Sir Henry Harington* and his Accusers

fers came thither, and were fully hearde
in Triall; wherof it fell out that his Ac-
cusers did maliciously fayne Falshoods and
Untruthes agaynst hym. Which being
proved, the Lord Deputy at lengthe
stooode up, and sayd, " I am glad that
" *Sir Henry Harington* hath purged hym-
" selfe soe well, and soe would I wish,
" that all others could doe, that are soe
" accused, and doe governe in the lyke
" Places. But because he hath byn
" wrongefully accused, as he should have
" byn sharpely punished, if it had byn
" proved, soe I know noe Cause, but
" that those which have slandered hym,
" should be made to know and to confesse
" theyr Slaunders: Therfore my Censure
" is, that these Accusers of *Sir Henry Ha-*
" *rington* shall publickely confesse theyr
" Faltes in accusinge hym falsely, and that
" too, in the Church where *Sir Henry Ha-*
" *rington* dwelleth; allso that they shall
" remayne in Prison, untill they be wil-
" ling to make this Confession and Satis-
" faction in some other publick Places.

THIS Sentence of the Lord Deputie's did not only declare his Desire to doe Justice, in hearing willingly the Complaynts of any, which make shew that they were wronged, but it wrought this Effect ; that the Accusers could not complayne they were wronged, because they were not hearde ; the accused was satisfied and righted, because by indifferent hearinge he had purged himselfe beinge guiltles ; and they that were not Parties but Viewers, and Hearers of this Complaynt might take President herby, how false Accusers should be served ; how innocent Men should be protected and purged upon just Proffe ; and how Governors should be subject to accompt, and therfore wary of theyr Actions whilst they are in Authority.

ANOTHER Course (besydes this publicke and indifferent Hearinge of Suites and Complayntes) the Lord Deputie tooke, wherby he reduced many discontented and disorderly Persons unto Obedience and civill Government, which was, that
when

when any of the Lords stood upon any Termes of Minors demanding, or making Tytle unto Landes, or of any other privat or publicke Quarrells: He would as soone as he might have Intelligence therof, send for them on Protection, which few would refuse; and when they were come to his Presence, he would expostulate the Matter, tell them their Duties, and the Danger of Disobedience, assuring them of Favour, if they remayned faithfull, and lettinge them know what they should trust unto, if they did the contrary. After such Conference and Admonition he would dismiss them; if they continued honest he would use them very kyndely; but if they did afterwards breake the Bounds of Fidelitie, there was noe Hope of Mercie or Favor to be found with him. For as to the tractable and faythfull, he was a known Friend, so to them that would flyde from, and transgresse the Boundes of Dutie after Admonition, and Pardon once obtained, he would be very severe. Wherby he kept the best sorte in Obedience with Love, and the worst with Feare of offendinge.

IN these Services the Lord Deputy continued very carefull all the Time of his Government, and had allways not only a watchfull Eye unto the Mayntenance of Peace in that State, but was very foresight-full and fearefull of any Perill, that might befall either of both Kingdomes, that of *Ireland* or this of *England*; for he maynteyned and imployed divers Spialls in *Spain*, wherof tower were put on the Racke by the Marquesse *della Santa Cruce*, and three of them died therof in the Year 1587. by whom, and by others that the Lord Deputie imployed in *Spain* and *Portugall*, he did receive often Advertisement of the *Spanish* Preparations agaynst *England*, and continually informe the Queene of *England*, and hir Privy Counsell, or some principall Persons amongst them, as will appere by his divers Letters written therof out of *Ireland*, wherof some are yet extant; and in all of them the Burden was ever this Admonition, *To prepare for Resistance, and to prevent such perillous Designments in Time. For that it was dangerous to be taken unprovided,*

provided, and to stand upon had I wist, when it was too late to incounter the Malice and mischievous Invasions of soe powerfull an Adversary. Of these particular Advertisements the Lord Deputy wrote well neere forty severall Letters to the Queene, to hir (*) Counsell, to the Erle of *Leicester*, to the then Lord Treasurer, and to Sir *Frauncis Walsingham*, in the Years 1586, and 1587.

AND besydes all this, allthough he received divers Oppositions in his Government both in *Ireland*, by the secrett Working and Practises of his Contraries of that Kingdom, and by such Meanes as both they, and his other Opposites wrought agaynst hym in *England*. Yet still he maynteyned the State of *Ireland* in firme Peace, soe that there was scarce any knowen Rebell in *Ireland* before his Departure thence; but *O-Donell* being suspected, because his People began to play some bad Partes, and hymselfe stood upon some

(*) See the *Appendix*, Numb. V.

Terms, not fitting for hym to do, or insift upon ; therfore the Lord Deputy and Counsell entred into Consultation how he might be apprehended. Wherein some of them did advise to send Forces into O-Donell's Contry, and to bring hym in by Force. But the Lord Deputy argued agaynst that Project, alledging that this could not be done without an Army of two or three Thousand ; which would be both hazardous and chargeable to the State and the Queene's Majestie, yet sayd he, *You shall geive me Leve to trie one Conclusion which I have in Hand, and doe hope to have O-Donell thereby without Losse of Men or Expence of Money ; and if that take not Effect, then let us fall to Force, or what other Meanes we can devise for his Apprehension.*

THE Lord Deputie's Devise was thus. He had prepared a Shippe with some Wines to be sent into O-Donell's Contry, and the Captayne of that Shippe beinge one chosen for the Porpose, had this geiven hym in Command from the Lord Deputy, that when he came into O-Donell's Contry,
he

he should sayle as neere his Dwelling as he might, and there profferre his Wines to be solde (beinge *Sackes* which the *Irishmen* love best) and soe he did. At his Coming into the Contry, the Contry People came to the Shippe, some to drink, some to prise the Wines, and all of them, according to the Captayne's Instructions, had what Wine they would drinke for nothings, as a Taste ; with this kinde Offer, that if *O-Donell* would come hymselfe, he should buy the best Wine at a reasonable Rate. At length *O-Donell* came hymselfe to buy some Wines, whom they used so courteously, that they gave hym his full Allowance, and finding hym well fraughted, and the Windes servinge well for that Porpose that they came, to returne backe, and to carie *O-Donell* with them, they stowed hym under Hatches at the first, and soe brought him to *Dublyn*, without Stroake or Losse of any Man's Life. Which to have byn effected by Force, as it was first intended, would by all Conjecture of Reason have cost the Queene much Treasure, if not Blood of hir Subjectes, because *O-Donell* at that time

was one of the strongest, and most dangerous Subjectes in that Kingdome, by reason of his Alliance, his Command, and the Strength of his Contrie; but by this Stratagem he was brought in without Blowes, and his Contrie kept in Quiett without any Rebellion.

Now the Lord Deputie havinge performed all these acceptable Services, and yet finding that he was much maligned by some of the State there, and they by theyr Meanes, or by some other working underhand for the two last Yere of his Government, allthough he had as good Successe almost as hymselfe desired in all his Indeavors, serving for the State, yet had he many nypping Letters sent hym from the Queene, and some Restrayntes of dealing in any Thinge of Importance without the Consent of the Counsell there, with the lyke Disallowances of particular Actions, which moved the Lord Deputy many Times to much Griefe and Choller, wherto he was prone by Nature, and therefore he desired nothinge more than his Remove from that

Go.

Sir John Perrott, Kt. 281

Government above a Yere before his Departure. For which Porpose he kept his Sonne Sir *Thomas Perrott* in *London* to sollicite his Revocation, and to effecte the same he wrote divers Letters unto his best Friendes in *England*. At the Length it was obteyned, but before he gave over his Government, being in a troublesome Time, in the Yere 1588. agaynst the *Spanish* Invasion, he tooke this Course to settle the Contrie in Peace: And to assure that seaminge Peace with sufficient Pledges for theyr Fidelitie, he sent for the Chiefe Lords of each Contry requiring them to put in Pledges for the Mayntenance of Peace, and defending the Realme agaynst forayne Invasion; to which they all yelded either willingly, or at the least seamingly willinge, and haveinge received these Pledges, the Lord Deputy, for Prevention of Suspicion for any Mistrust to be conceived in them, used these Speaches to good Porpose, as the Time then stood.

“ Y o u that are here committed to
“ Custodie as Pledges, and such as have
“ put you in for Pledges, I would wish
“ nei-

282 *The LIFE of*

“ neither of you to thinke that this Se-
 “ curity is required, soe much in Distrust
 “ of your particular Fidelities, as for the
 “ generall Quiett of the Contrie, and
 “ for the particuler Good of yourselves
 “ in a Time soe dangerous: For if I were
 “ in your Cafes, or were a Lord of any
 “ Contrie in *Ireland*, I should desire at
 “ this time, rather to be thus bounded
 “ than leste at Liberty, because whilst
 “ any Lord is confined, and not in his
 “ Contry, if any thinge be done amisse
 “ there, he hath the lesse to answer for
 “ it. Wheras if you, or those for whose
 “ Fidelities you do undertake, were in
 “ your Contries, if any of your People
 “ without your Privitie, should committ
 “ any Disobedience, you, being the prin-
 “ cipall Men, should beare the Blame,
 “ or at the least the Suspicion of theyr
 “ evill Actions: but now you shall, by
 “ this small Restraynt, be freed from Su-
 “ spicion, and by your Patience now, be
 “ thought hereafter worthy of better Cre-
 “ dite, and Authority in your Contries.
 “ In the meane time for your owne Saffe-
 “ tie and the Satisfaction of the Prince,
 “ use

Sir John Perrott, Kt. 283

“ use your best Meanes by Messages, and
“ otherwise to keepe the People in those
“ Partes for which you are bound, in
“ Peace and Loyaltie, soe shall you be
“ shortly sette at Liberty, and be ever
“ after better esteemed of.

By this Speache and Persuasion the Lord Deputy prevayled soe much with the Pledges, that they were the more willing to indure theyr Restraynt without Grudginge or Griefe; and by having them, he had a fast Tie upon the Contries, and severall Provinces of *Ireland*. The Gentlemen that were lesse for Pledges in the Castell of *Dublyn* by the Lord Deputy in the Yere 1588, on the 19th of *September* were these.

Sonnes to *Shane O-Neale*.

1. *Henry O-Neale*.
2. *Art Oge O-Neale*.

Pledges for *Monster*.

1. *Philip Orealie*.
2. *Patrick Fitz Moris*.

3. *Ed.*

3. *Edmond Fitz Gibons, Esq; alias the White Knight.*
4. *Patrick Conden.*
5. *John Fitz Edmonds, Esq, alias the Seneshall.*

Pledges for O-Neale, and his Contry:

1. *Mahon Mac Gilson,*
2. *Rory Ballagh,*
3. *John Croan.*

Pledges for O-Donell, and his Contry:

1. *O-Donell hymselfe leste Prisoner,*
2. *Hugh Roe O-Donell,*
3. *Donell Goran,*
4. *Mac Gwynie Fanett,*
5. *Owen Mac Gwynie,*
6. *Owen Ogalgho.*

Pledges for Mac Gwere, and his Contry,

1. *Owen Mac Hugh,*
2. *James Mac Manas.*

[Pledges for Mac Mahon, and his Contry:

1. *Brian Mac Mahon,*
2. *John O-Duffe,*

Pledges

Sir John Perrott, Kt. 285

Pledges for *Feaugh Mac Hugh*, and his
Country.

1. *Bedmond Mac Feaugh*,
2. *Brian Mac Feaugh*,
3. *Hugh O-Toole*.

Pledges for *Walter Bengh*, and his Contry.

1. *Readogh O-Toole*,
2. *Garrett Fitz Moris*,
3. *Richard Fitz Moris*,
4. *James Fitz Moris*.

For *Mac Gnyllie*, and his Contry.
Richard Mac Gnyllie.

For *O-Cane*, and his Contry.
Donogh O-Mallan;

For *O-Donelan*, and his Contry.
Neale Goroomes, O-Donell.

'ALL these the Lord Deputy lefte in
the Castell of *Dublyn* before his Departure
from *Ireland*, as Pledges for the Peace
of the several Contries within that King-
dom.

WHICH

WHICH Pledges, if they had byn kept safte and carefully (as some of them, wherof *O-Donell* was one, were afterwards suffered to escape) they had byn good Assurances for the Quietnesse of the Contrie, and had saved the Lives of many Men, and the Expençe of much Treasure, which was afterwards spent in the Warres, and by the Revolte of these Men and many others which did follow, and adhere unto them. And for Conclusion of the Lord Deputie's Services, a Counsellor of Ireland writteth thus, (1) *Subjugavit Ultoniam, pacificavit Conaciam, relaxavit Mediam, ligavit Mononiam, fregit Lageniam, extirpavit Scotos, refrnavit Anglos, et hijs omnibus per aequę vectigal acquisivit Reginæ.* Soe the Lord Deputie leavinge all Thinges in good Order and the Contrie in Tranquillitie, did prepare for his Departure ; and before his Delivery of the Sword, he gave unto the Cittie of *Dublyn* a fayre

(1) Sir *Nicholas White*, Knt. Master of the Rolles in Ireland.

Sir John Perrott, *Kt.* 287

standing Guilt Bowle (which passeth from one Maior to another in *Dublyn* yerely) with his Armes engraven, and the *Perrott* on the Toppe ; about the Beake wherof were written these Wordes in *Latine* : *Relinquo in Pace* ; meaning that he lefte the *Cittie, Contrie, and People in Peace*. Which was very trew, and well known to be soe ; for at the Delivery of the Sword unto Sir *William Fitz Williames* (who succeeded hym in that Government) he sayd these Wordes in the Hearinge of many honourable and worshipful Persons, wherof some are yet livinge ; quoth he, “ Now
“ my Lord Deputie I have delivered you
“ the Sword with the Contry in firme
“ Peace and Quietnes ; my Hope is, you
“ will informe the Queene and Counsell
“ of *England* therof, even as you finde
“ it ; for I have lefte all in Peace, and
“ Pledges sufficient to maynteyne the
“ Peace ”. To whom the new Lord Deputy answered, “ Sir *John Perrott*, I
“ must needes confesse, that I finde the
“ Contrie quiett, and all Thinges here in
“ good Order ; I pray God I may leave
“ it halfe so well, and then I shall thinke,
“ that

288 *The L I F E of*

“ that I have done my Queene and Con-
 “ trie good Service”. Then Sir *John*
Perrot replied, “ My Lord Deputy, I
 “ will say more unto you before all these
 “ Witnesſes, that there is noe ill-mynded
 “ or ſuſpected Perſon in this Kingdom,
 “ which can carie but ſix Swords after
 “ hym into the Fielde, but if you will
 “ name hym, and ſhall deſire to have
 “ hym, notwithstanding that I have re-
 “ ſigned the Sword, and with it all my
 “ Authority, yet I will (ſoe you ſhall
 “ thinke it neceſſary) ſend for any ſuch,
 “ and if they come not in on my Word,
 “ I will looſe the Credite and Reputa-
 “ tion of all my Service”. To which
 the Lord Deputy did answer, “ I know
 “ you can do this, Sir *John Perrott*, but
 “ there is noe Neede therof; for all is
 “ as well as it needes to be, and ſoe I
 “ confeſſe it.

AFTER this Charge delivered up, and
 all Things elſe provided for Sir *John Per-*
rott's Departure, he leſte *Ireland*, and at
 the Day of his Departure out of *Dublyn*,
 there were many Noblemen and Gentle-
 men

Sir John Perrott, Kt. 289

men of great Worth come thither to take theyr Leave of hym; amongst whom the old *O-Neale*, *Turlough Lenough*, with divers others was there, and he, in the greate Reverence and Love that he bare to *Sir John Perrott*, did not only come to *Dublyn*, to byd hym *Farewell*; but tooke Boate, and saw hym on Shippe-board, looking after hym as farre as ever he could kenn the Shippe under sayle, when he shedde Teares, as if he had byn beaten; the lyke did others of good Note and Name at that Time. Allso a greate Number of poore Contry People came thither at his Departure; some that dwelt twenty, some forty Myles, or more from *Dublyn*; and many of them that had never seen hym before: yet they did strive, and covet, as he went thorow the Streetes, if they could not take hym by the Hand, yet to touch his Garment; all praying for him, and for his longe Life: And when he asked them why they did soe; they answered, " That they
" never had enjoyed theyr owne with
" Peace before his Time, and did doubt
" they should never doe so agayn, when

U

" he

“ he was gone”. Such was the Love of the Contrie in generall towards Sir *John Perrott*, that never did any Lord Deputie of *Ireland* depart thence, with more good Lyking of the Commons, Nobility, and Gentry of that Nation, wherof, and of all that is here written touchinge his Services, there are divers yet livinge worthy of Credite, whoe will beare Record therof.

SOE Sir *John Perrott* having govern- ed foure Yeres, as Lord Deputy of *Ireland*, departed thence in the Yere 1588, and sayled to his Castell of *Carew* in *Pembrokeshire*; where he did arive accompanied with as gallant a Troupe of Gentlemen and Serving-men, to as great a Number, as ever followed any Lord Deputy of his Sorte.

Now havinge related Sir *John Perrott's* Life and Services thus farre, my wearied Pen is unwilling to prosecute his Storie any farther; partly because the Finishing thereof will be laborious, and aske some Lengthe of Time and of Discourse;

course; but principally for that the Catastrophe of his Life was very tragically; and to writte all that happned therein, may, perchaunce, breede Offence, and touch the Proceedings of Times past too much: Therefore for this time, there shall noe more be sayd of hym, but this, that his whole Life was lyke to a tragical Comedie, in the Beginning prosperous and joyfull; in the Ende unfortunate and lamentable: At which let noe Man wonder, because he hath not had that *Fortune alone*; but rather make use of his Fall by making this Construction of his Fortunes, *That Men of greatest Spirites are subject to greatest Perills*; and that towards the Ende of Princes Raigne (especially in their declyninge Age) many Things happen otherwise than at other Times they would, or should doe.

BUT without descanting on Times, or ayming at particular Persons, we may gather these Conclusions and Considerations out of that which is written of *Sir John Perrott's Life*, that as his extraordinary

traordinary Personage, Witte, Valour and Experience were Causes of his Employment and Preferment, soe the same procured unto hym much private Hatred and evill Will. Which with his playne Wordes, Severities in Government, and not waying of his evill Willers, were in the Ende the Causes of his Overthrow ; which Perills, if his Example may prevent in the Readers herof, the Writer hath his Desire, and theyr indifferent Censure shall be his Satisfaction.

Here ends the MANUSCRIPT.



OUR



OUR Author, whoever he was, seems to have a very great Tenderness for Sir *John Perrott*, and therefore draws a Veil on that Part of his Life, which he judges too melancholy to be exposed; and indeed he may well be excused for not carrying on the History farther, as from the Time of his Retirement to the Issue of his Enemies unwearied Malice (which had persecuted him so long, and with so much Barbarity) his Condemnation, passed not many Months, when a most severe and cruel Scrutiny was made into his Actions, Words, and even Thoughts were examined into, and by a Law, since happily repealed, he fell a Sacrifice to Revenge and Envy: For according to our best Historians, he was on 17 April 1592. arraigned at *Westminster*; found guilty of High Treason, and received Sentence of Death in the same Place on June 16. He was returned to the *Tower*, where Death soon put a natural End to all his Troubles, and his

294 *The LIFE of, &c.*

liberal Mistress, Queen *Elizabeth*, bestowed that Estate on his Son, which an Entail had long before secured to him, and which she thought not fit to dispute; in this indeed more politick, as well as more commendable than some of her Successors; tho' even here, according to *Camden*, the Merit of having married (a) the Earl of *Essex's* Sister, seems to have been no inconsiderable Motive.

I shall not enter farther on the Character of this great Man, which has been drawn by so many better Pens; the immortal *CAMDEN*, *NAUNTON*, and *LLOYD*, (particularly the last,) are very large on this Head, and to whom I refer the Reader.

(a) *Camdeni Elizabetha, edita per Clariss. Hearnium*, pag. 647. *Bona Filio [Perrotti] qui Essexii Sororem duxerat ex transcriptione prius facta, et Regina gratia obtulerunt.*



APPENDIX.

Original PAPERS:

NUMB. I.

Sir JOHN PERROTT's Commis-
sion for Lord Deputy of IRELAND;
mentioned in this Work.

ELIZABETHA Dei Gratia Angliæ,
Ec. Omnibus ad quos præsentēs Literæ
pervenerint. Salutem. Sciatis, quod nos certis ur-
gentibus causis, & considerationibus nos specialiter
moventibus, de provida circumspectione & indu-
stria prædilecti & fidelis nobis JOHANNIS
PERROTT, Militis plenius confidentes de
advísamento Concilii nostri assignavimus, facimus,
ordinavimus, constituimus & deputavimus, &
per præsentēs assignamus, facimus, ordinamus &
constituimus eundem JOHANNEM PER-
ROTT, Militem, Deputatum nostrum Gene-
ralem

ralem Regni nostri HIBERNIÆ habend. tenend. gaudend. exercend. & occupand. officium prædictum eidem JOHANNI PERROTT Militi durante beneplacito nostro, dantes & concedentes eidem Deputato nostro Generali plenam tenore præsentium potestatem ad pacem nostram ac ad leges & consuetudines Regni nostri prædicti custodiend. & custodiri faciend. & ad omnes & singulas leges nostras, &c.

THE whole Contents of this Commission.

TO conserve the Peace, to punish Offenders, to make Orders and Proclamations, to receive Offenders to Grace, to give Pardones and impose Fines, to levie Forces, to fyght and make Peace; to dispose Rebels Lands, to pardonne all Treasons, savynge touchinge the Queene's Person, and counterfeyting of Coyne; to give Offices, savynge the Chancellor, Treasurer, two Chief Justices, Chief Baron, and Master of the Rolles; to dispose of Ecclesiasticall Livinges, except Arch-Buyshopps and Buyshopps; to receive Homage and the Othe, to make Provision for his Howseholde according to the auntient Custome; to assemble the Parliament with hir Majestie's Privitie, to receive the Accoumpts of Officers, savynge the Treasurers, and to exercise Marshiall Lawe.

II.

The Queene's Warrant to the Lords Justices of IRELAND, for Administring the Oath, and Delivery of the Sword to Sir JOHN PERROTT.

Jan. 31. MDLXXXIII.

RYGH^T Reverend Fader in God, Ryght trustie and well-beloved, Wee greete you well: Whereas upon the Departure from thence of our Ryght Trustie and well-beloved the Lorde *GRAY* of *WILTON*, late our Deputie there, We thought it meete for our Government there, to appoynt you joyntly to have the Place of our Justices, untill such Time as we should resolve to send another thither to be Our Deputie there; We let you to witte, that meaninge now noe longer to burden you with such a Charge, wherein you have accordinge to the Truste imposed in you, very wisely behaved yourselves, greatly to our Contentation, we have chosn and appoynted our Ryght Trustie and well-beloved Sir *JOHN PERROTT*, Knight, this Bearer, to be our Deputie of that our said Realme, and that for that Purpose shall send him presentlie thither: Wherfore our Will and Pleasure is, and by Virtue of these our Letters

298 *The LIFE of*

ters, We authorize you upon the View of our Letters Pattents made and delivered unto hym in that Behalfe, both to minister unto hym the Othe accustomed to be given unto the Deputie there; and allsoe to deliver unto hym the Sword, as hertofore hath been used. And farther, that you communicate unto hym ample the present Estate of that our Realme, and of all our Affayrs there, for his better Instruſtions, at his Entrance into that Govern- ment, and the Advancement of our Service. And these our Letters shall be your sufficient Warrant and Discharge in this Behalfe. Given under our Signett, &c. the last of *Janu- ary*, MDLXXXIII, in the xxvi Yere of our Raigh.

III.

*The QUEENE's Warrant for the En-
tertainment of Sir JOHN PER-
ROTT, in IRELAND.*

TRUSTIE and Well-beloved we greet
you well. Wheras we have nowe ap-
poynted our ryght Trustie and Well-beloved
Sir *JOHN PERROTT*, Knyght, to be
our Deputie in that our Realme of *IRE-
LAND*, for which Office Allowance as well
of

Sir John Perrott, Kt. 299

of Dietts as of Intertaynments for certayn
Horsemen is to be given hym. These be there-
fore to let you to wit, that we allowe unto
hym for his ordinarie Diet One Hundred
Poundes Sterling, according to the last Esta-
blishment *per Menssem* in MDLXXX. and for his
Retinew fifty Horsemen and fifty Footmen,
with such Wages for every Horseman and
Footman, and for theyr Officers, as was al-
lowed to Sir *WILLIAM FITZ WIL-*
LIAMS, and Sir *HENRY SIDNEY*,
Knyght, in the late Times of their Govern-
ments in that Realme ; after which Rates as
well for his owne Diett, as for the said fiftie
Horsemen and Footemen, and for theyr Offi-
cers, We Will and Commaund you to make
Payment to hym duringe his Employment and
Service in that Place, from the Date of our
Letters Pattents, authorizing hym to that Go-
vernment ; and these our Letters shall bee suf-
ficient Warrant as well to you, as to any Trea-
surer, or Vice-Treasurer there, for the Time
beinge, and to your and theyr Substitutes, as
also to the Auditor, or his Deputies, and to
all other Commissioners to be appoynted over
your Accompts, to passe and allowe the same
Payements to you accordyngly. Given &c. the
Fourth of *Aprill*, MDLXXXIII. in the xxvith
Yere of our Raign.

IV.

The QUEENE's Instructions to Sir JOHN PERROTT, at his Going into IRELAND.

YOU shall see immediately upon your Arrival into that Realme, assembled our Counsell there, and confer with them what Course of Government, upon due Consideration had of the present Estate of the saide Realme, may be helde, so as Justice may take Place, our Charges be lessened, our Revenews increased, and our Subjectes there not oppressed.

YOU shall also consider what Forces are meete to be continewed in Paye, and how the reste, chargeable unto us and burdensom unto the Contrie, may be discharged; and alsoe, how the Horsemen and Footemen servinge there, may be reduced to their oulde Paye, which by reason of the generall Rebellion in that Realme (the Contrie being wasted) Wee were driven to increase. And therfore we see no Reason, but the Bande residinge in those Contries, that are not wasted, may live well enough of the oulde Paye, especiallie being victualled by us: And for Ease and Diminishinge

nishinge of our Charges in that Behalfe, Wee doe thincke it meete, that you should treat with those Contries that are not wasted, as well in *MOUNSTER*, or elsewhere in that Realme, to see, if you can drawe them with good Contentment, to contribute something towards the fyndinge of that Garison, as *CARBERRIE* hertofore hath done.

To advise of the Inhabiting of *MOUNSTER*, the attaynted Landes to be let out at easie Rentcs, to surveie and certifie what States — Portecorne. — The attaynted Estates to be bestowed upon Servitours, — Younger Brothers of Noblemen, Diminysh Pentioners — Review former Instructions — Renewalle of forfeited Leases for three Yeres, Beef, Remittall of Arrearages — Reversion of Lands to the Goyernors — Landes of the Attaynted to be appoynted to Howse-keepinge — Reservation of Tymber, Woodes. — Residence of Officers. — Reportes to the State of Outrages of disloyal Subjectes — Profitts of Customcs, Exscheates, &c. — Establishment for *CONNAUGHT*. — President for *MOUNSTER*, Allowance begin at *May*, Transportation. — Counsellors, Buyshopp of *MEATH*, *JOHN NORRIS*, *RICHARD BINGHAM*, *THOMAS STRANGE*. — Refer the Choyce of a Person to the Chancellor

cellor and Others. — Certificate of the last
Treasurer, his Receiptes and Expenses. —

V.

*A Letter from Sir JOHN PERROTT,
to the Privy Councill in ENGLAND.*

May it please your goode Lordships,

ALTHOUGH I and this Councill have, by our joynt Letters, truly declared to you the dutiful State of Things here, and the Causes, both forrayne and domesticall, whereupon we gather it, and withall have shewed our extreme Wantes, and what Supplyes are desired; yet understanding thence, but not from your Lordshyppes (for I have had no kinde of Advertisements, Answer, or Resolution, for the same, these twelve Moneths) that there is a greate Preparation made by the *Spanyshe* Kinge agaynst the Reaulme, and that your Lordshyppes have Intelligence thereof; I cannot but, as one whose chiefe Charge and Care it is, importune your Lordshyppes to caste your Eie more carefullie this Waye; humbly praying you to confider, in what Case we are to trie with a mightie Prince; whether this Reaulme shall be still her Majesties, or his; if there be anie such Matters (as your Lordshyppes

shippes knowe best) then I beseeche youre Lordshippes to think, whether it be more safetie to saye, that we have sent Provision to encounter the Daunger, or else, you will send, when, perhappes, it will be too late. And withall for mine own Discharge, if I shall tarrie, and have nothinge, wherewith. I have but a Life to yeeld for her Majestie, and my Contrie; for the Losse thereof I greeve not, but rather for the Harme that through Defectes, I feare, may come to her Majestie and the State, and the Shame I shall leave behynd me. This forrayne Preparation, if there be anie suche Thinge, is likelie to be spent agaynst *Munster*, to seize upon, and to spoyle the Citties and Townes of the same, which in Trueth are very weake. If I shall goe thither, what for the late Warres, and this laste bad Seson, there is not soe much to be had there, as will mayntein that one Bande of two Hundred, that is under Mr. *Thomas Norys*, the Vice-President there, but that I am inforced to shifte them from Towne to Towne, who, by reson of theyr extreme Penurie do receive them with great Greefe and Grudge. And though I had Men sufficient to incounter the Enemie that should come, yet for Want of Vyctualles, I should be driven to abandon the Place with Daunger and Shame; where, they that are to come over, are lyke to bring their Provysion with them, and to settle it
in

304 *The L I F E of*

in some Towne that they will soone feize upon for that Purpose: Wherefore what may issue, amongst this unconstant People, naturally delighting in Chaunge, your Lordshyppes may soone gather. Besydes this that I have sayd of the bare Estate of *MOUNSTER*, where there is not so much to be had as will serve for my owne Familie, or yet to feede my Horses till Grasse growe, I refer you to understand, not onely the same more fullie, but also the greate Wantes of the reste of the Reaulme, by the Declaration here enclosed; whych, as *Beverly* the Vyctualler maketh itt, so I knowe itt to be trew. And therefore I most humbly beseeche your Lordshyppes, to send speedie Order, that such a Staple of Vyctualls may be provided, and be sent over as your Lordshyppes shall think requisite to serve, as well for the Numbers here alreadye, as also for those that are to be sent over, to incounter such an Accident as may fall out. And herein I would wishe your Lordshyppes to consider the Windes and Weather, howe untowardly they have framed this Yeare. For as some have laine at *Chester* nine Weekes to come over hither, so hath there bene no Passage hence this six Weekes. Moreover, if there be such Purposes in hand, it were goode some Shippinge were dispatched for the Guard of the Coastes. And to all these and other Difficulties, may I, with your Lordshyppes
Favoure,

Sir John Perrott, *Kt.* 305

Favoure, adde one more to be consydered of, howe weakely I am seconded, if Neede fall out, by those forrayne Attemptes, whereof I would say little for any other Cause: The Marshall is oulde, and not able either to ride or goe. The Master of the Ordinance is bothe absent and oulde, and I wishe there were a more sufficiente Man in his Place. The Lord President, and Sir *William Stanley*, who are Men of goode Conduct are drawne away; Sir *H. Harrington*, Mr. *Edwarde Barkley*, and the Senescal *Dantry*, are suffered to remayne still there; but I humbly pray, that they may be sped away, together with all other that are Servitors by anie Manner of Paie there, and soe havinge herein discharged my Dutie, I humblie end,

Your Lordshyppes,

Most humble at Commaundment,

From the *Castle of*
Dublyn, January
31. 1585.

JOHN PERROTT.

306 *The Last WILL of*

VI.

*The Last WILL and TESTAMENT of
Sir JOHN PERROTT, Knight,
Written by himself IIIId May, MDXCII.*

THE Trew and Last Testament of Me
Sir JOHN PERROTT, Knight,
mayde this thyrde of *Maye* one Thousand,
fyve Hundred and Nynety two, in the Name
and Feare of God ; Touching my Religion
and Loialtie to the Queene's Majestie and my
Countrie, upon my Salvacyon and Dampna-
cyon, as of other Thinges, as neare as my
Memory will serve me. To be seene of all
the New Professours of the Gospell. God taik
me unto thee, and brynge my Soule out of
this, that it may give Thankes unto the
Lord. Seinge thou, O Lord, haste found
Iniquitye, even in thyne Angels, and that the
Heavens are not cleane in thy Sight, much
more is Man abominable and filthie, which
drynketh Iniquitye like Water. It is the
Lorde of Heaven, that ruleth and directeth
all Thynges by his Providence, unto whom
I crie for Mercie and Forgivenessse of all my
Synnes, knowinge that his Mercy is above all
his Workes ; yea, and as greate as hymself.
Come therefore, Lord Jesus, holi and trewe
in

in all thy Doinges, and shorten our Daies. Of which great God I aske Forgivenesse for all my Sinnes, which are infinite. Trustinge only to be saved by the bitter Passion, Deathe, and Bloud-sheddinge of my Savioure *Jesus Christ*, and not by ani of my Workes. For I confesse, that I am an unprofitable Servant, comittinge my Soule to the Handes of the Omnipotent God of Heaven and Erthe. I doe forgyve all Men, and desire to be forgiven of all Men, leavinge all Revenginges for the greate Wrongs I have susteined to God's Justice and Judgment. I do hereby in the Feare of the Lorde of Heaven and Erthe, and upon my Salvacyon and Dampnacyon trewly testefie to all trew Professors of the Gospell, that I have not hearde any Masse sithence the Begininge of my Soveraygne the Queene's most happie Raygne. But I have ever sithence the Begininge of King *Edwarde* the sixthe his Raygne abhorred the *Pope's* Idoll of the Masse : It beinge a most wicked Illusion to deceeve Men, invented by Popes, who in my Conscience are that Anty-Chryst which the Scryptures doe so much speake agaynste ; whych idolotrous Traditions of the Masse is contrarie to that most holie and Reverend Sacrament of the Supper of the Lord, instituted by our Lord and Savioure *Jesus Christ* at his last Supper, to be receaved of the Faithfull in both Kyndes : By receavinge of

308 *The Last WILL of*

whiche holie Sacrament, as he ordained the same, we receave the same to our Salvacyon as a most certayne Signe or Badge, that we confesse *Christ* to be the Savioure of Mankynde, and that by his Dethe onelie Man is restored to the Favoure of God, which we had losse by the Falle of *Adam*, by whiche Redempcyon we are made Heyers of Heaven, with, and by *Christ*. And nowe I make my Complainge to God and all good Men, that I have bene most falselie accused through the Malice and Envie of some wicked and evill disposed Persons, Schollers of *Machiavelli*, that I have been a Tratour to my Soveraygne Queene and Countrie, but I do denie the Meritt, and the Benefitt of the Blood-sheddinge of my Saviour *Iesus Christ*; which I would not doe to gett the whole Worlde, if ever I doe knowe, that I have committed anie Treason agaynst my Quene or Countrie, or that I was at any tyme in any Confederacie with the Kinge of *Spayne*, or with anie of his Ministers directely, or indirectely, in any Pointe of Treasone, or ever receaved Message from hym, or sent hym anie, this thirtie fyve Yeres laste paste; or ever was in any Confederacie with the Duke of *Parma*, the Viscounte *Baltinglass*, in all my whole Life. But the Letters whyche were had from *Dennys Oroughan*, directed to the *Spanyshe* Kynge, and Sir *William Stanley*, are forged and devised by Sir *Dennys Oroughan*,
and

and his Partners. And I doe take the God of Heven and Erthe to witnesse, that I never had any Conference with Sir *Denys* for his Im-
 ployment to *Spayne*, to Sir *William Stanley*,
 or Sir *Bryan Borke*, neather was he employed
 therin, as he most falselie alleadgeth. Neither
 did I truste Syr *Denys*, but as a Spie; as I did
 others in *Ireland*, to understand the Disposi-
 tions of the People in *Ireland*, for the furthe-
 rance of hir Majestie's Service. Neather did
 I ever gyve or delyver him any Money that
 was myne owne, but the Monye that he had
 was Spyall Money, or Dyette Monies allowed
 by Warrant, being hir Majestie's Money, as
 by Sir *Henry Wallop's* Accounts will appere,
 excepte he myght have some parte of the
 Almes Money I gave the Prysoners. Neather
 did I ever allowe him Meate from my Table,
 nor appoynted hym Wyne when he lysted, oute
 of my Cellar. All which before written is
 trew, as the Lord shall save my Soule. I do
 further declare upon my Salvacyon, or Damp-
 nacyon, that although I did employ *Jaspar*
Thunder as a Spye to *Portugal* (as I did sever-
 al others) yet did I never send by hym Mes-
 sage to the Duke of *Medina*, the Marques
della Sancta Cruce, or to any *Spanyard* or *Por-*
tingall. But he was used to do his beste to
 brynge home certaine *Irishemen*, and if he plaid
 anie false Parte, that was done wythout my
 Priyitie. And the Intelligence I had from
 X 3 hym,

310 *The Last WILL of*

hym, I did alwaies imparte the same; and he told me he had delyvered other Intelligence to Mr. Secretarie *Walsingham*. I do also denie my God of Heaven and Erthe, if ever I spake to *John Garlande* any such trayterous Wordes as weare redde at my Arraignment, as Matter saide to be parte of the said *Garlande's* Examynacyon. For as *Garlande* was but a foolishhe light fellow, soe I never esteemed of hym, or used hym but for Carryadge of Packettes, when I had noe other convenient Messenger, or to looke to my Horse-boyes, or such lyke base Matters. I take the Lorde of Lordes to witnesse, that I have alwaies thought hir Majestie to be lawfull and indubitable Quene of these hir Imperyall Kyngdomes of *England, Fraunce, and Ireland*. And I denie my God, if I would not have adventured my Life againste anie Man living, that would have sayd the contrarie. Neather did I ever send the saide *Garlande* to *Borke* to stirr him to committ anie unlawfull Faete. Neather did I ever truste or favoure *Borke*; but in Shewe onely to keepe hym quiette, as I did the lyke with the *Northern* Lordes, for the keeping of the Reaulme in Peace, accordinge to the Warrant, whych I had receaved here-hence. I doe lykewyse testify upon my Faithe, that the Lorde Chauncellor of *Ireland*, and *Phillip Wyllyams* doe falselie belye me in their Declarations, touchinge any materiall Pointe that concerneth

cerneth hir Majestie, which they alleadged that I should speake of hir Highnesse: And what is spoken therein by them is of Malice, they bothe beinge knowen to be Men that will speake muche Untruthe, and the one was myne Enemye, and the other was a Spye upon me. And I take God to Witnesse, that I never had Purpose to favour Maister Doctor *Creangbe*, or ever saw hym to my Knowledge, or ever herde from hym, but was desyrous to taik him. Neather did I ever write Warrant to *Richarde Hardyng* with any Purpose of Favour to the aforesayd Doctor *Creangbe*, but if he had the Warrant he spoke of, it was at the *White Knightes* Suite, for his own Goode, and not for *Creangbe*. Neather did I ever favoure Fryars, or such kynde of Vermeyne; but I have suppressed more Monasteries and Fryars while I governed that Lande of *Irelande*, than was done by all the Governoures before in thirtie Yeares. Neather did I ever favoure Papist for Papistrie's sake, but I did Justice to, and for them upon anie Complainge, as I did to others accordinge to the Commaundmente, which I receaved from hir Majestie. And I take the Lorde of Heven and Erthe to witnesse, that I never receaved *Rhyme* at the handes of Captayne *Woodhouse*, written agaynst hir Majestie, as he most falselie alleadgeth; but upon Wordes which he delyvered, took Order for the *Rhymer's* forthcomynge, which was done

312 *The Last WILL of*

by the Advise of some of hir Majestie's Counsaill. And I have given Money to *Rhymers* to sett forth hir Majesties most worthie Praises, as by Maister Treasurer's of the Warres *Accomptes* will appere. And whereas I was charged by one I knowe not, to have an Agent in *Lubecke*, or such other lyke Place beyonde the Seas, whych was to deale between the Duke of *Parma* and me, and named to be one *Nicholas Coleman*. I doe denie my God, if ever anie Person dealt betweene the Duke and me for any Cause; tho' I had about eighte Yeres past one *Nicholas Coleman*, a Barber, who beinge sicke, departed from me, but I never herde from hym, nor knowe not what became of hym synce he departed from me, or knowe where he dwellethe if he be lyvinge. Neither did I ever knowe any of the Jesuites or Seminarie Priestes, or ever herde of their Names, before one of the Witneses named them at the Tyme of my Arraignment. And theise two Witneses are suer Knyghres of the Poste hyred agaynste me, agaynste whom with all the other false Witneses procured falselie to depose to my Overthrowe, I crie out to God, that he revenge my Cause upon them, and their Procurors. Towching my dread Soveraigne Queene, whom the Lorde of Heven and Erthe bleesse and defende from all Evylls, and send hir Highnesse manie happye Yeres, with continual Victory over all hir

Ene.

Enemies. And whereas I have bene of late suspected of my Fidelity to hir Highnesse, I take the Highe God to Witnesse upon my Salvacyon or Dampnacyon, that I have ever served hir Highnesse with a most loyall Harte, and have alwaies, since I saw hir Majestie first, honored and most dewtifullie loved hir Highnesse, and was the better when I sawe hir, or could do hir Highnesse anie acceptable Service, and would ever since hir most happie Raygne have dyed in hir Service agaynst all Men, that would have dared to have offended hir Highnesse, or anie Parte of hir Dominions. But alas, and Woe is me! that suche false Witnesse should be procured agaynst me in a Tyme, that the Gospell is preached, and my most blessed Quene not beleve this my most voluntary Confession to be trewe. Neither have I upon my Salvacyon or Dampnacyon committed anie of the Tresons, whereof I was founde guiltye at *Westminster* the xxvijth Daie of *Aprill*, or therabouts. But I cannot denie it (being lette by Practise to doe the Service I could have donne for your Highnesse, or upon some sharpe Matter received) I have, far otherwyse than did become me, written some fonde and eger Wordes, for the whyche I sorrowe in my Harte and Soule. Therefore upon the Knees of my Harte I aske your Highnesse Forgiveness, whiche is all the Amendes I can now make. But that ever

I

314 *The Last WILL of*

I intended any disloyalle Acte agaynst hir Highnesse Person or Countries, I denie my Lorde God, if ever I proposed the same. The Lorde of Lordes ever shrowde hir Highnesse under hys mercyful Wynges, and bless my swete Countre from all Harme, and cause hir Highnesse to knowe hir trewe Subjectes from the false, and that hir Enimies may wounde themselves with the Weapons, that they shall lifte up agaynst hir Royall Person. And so God receave, and have Mercie upon my Soule, as I doe trewlie and unfainedlie speake and write this for my Parte. So be it good Lord. I ame to delyver a Truthe before the Lorde of Heven and Erthe, that where some flanderous Personnes have said, that I should give to my Lord *Treasurer*, or to Sir *Robert Cecill*, or to some other, to their Use greate Summes of Money or Monneys worthe. I speake and write it upon my Salvacyon or Dampnacyon, that I did never give, or promise to them Penney or Penney worth, or to any other to their Use for anie Favoure they should doe me in my Troubles, neather had I nede of their Helpe, my Cause being goode as it was. But I doe owe my Lord *Treasurer* more for my Dyett, than I doe knowe that I do owe anie other Man lyvinge; God blesse hym and his, whych is all the Paymente I am able now to make to hym. The Lord blesse the Erle of *Essex*, and keepe hym

Sir John Perrott, Kt. 315

hym in hir Majestie's Favoure. I send my Sonne and my Daughter, with their two little Children, God's Blessinge and Myne, and praie them to serve God and their Prince faithfullie, and have Mercy upon my Soule, and forgyve me my Sinnes, as I have bene faithfull and trew to my Soveraigne, Quene *ELIZABETHE*, and doe praie for as manie as will lyve and dye in God's Cawse agaynste all Men. *Amen, Amen, saith*

JOHN PERKOTT.



INDEX

INDEX.

- A.**
- A**BERGAVENY, Lord 24
 Appendix of Original Papers. 297
- B.**
- Baltinglas, James Viscount of, his Attainder. 252
 Boyes, and his Confederates. 144
 Bingham, Sir Richard. 144, 267
 Breminham, Lord 149
 Bury, Lord 55, 57, 151
- C.**
- Cashilles, Archbishop of 145
 Castles of Mayne and Lime-
 rick under great Delapi-
 dations 92, 93
 Clanrickard, Earl of 149
 Clyncarty, Earl of 55
 Corsey, Lord 55
- D.**
- Desmond's Attainder 218
 Dunganon, Baron of 145, 181
- Drewry, Sir William, Lord**
Chief Justice of Ireland, 112
- Dunlufe, its Situation, Ac-**
count of its Siege, 159. It
is unluckily lost again, 227
- Dyllon, Sir Lucas** 145,
 153, 157, 183
- E.**
- EDWARD VI. 28. dies 35
 ELIZABETH 44
 Essex, Earl of 75, 104
 Eustace, viz. Edmond, Tho-
 mas, Walter, Richard and
 James attainted. See Bal-
 tinglas.
- F.**
- Fenton, Secretary, his great
 Enmity to Sir John Per-
 rott. 245
 FRANCIS II. K. of France,
 his Death 45
 Fitz-Williams, Sir William,
 receives the Sword from Sir
 John Perrott at his De-
 parture, 287
- G.**
- Gorges, Sir William 112
 Gormond, Lord 55, 57

H

I N D E X.

H.

Harrington, Sir Henry 272
HENRY VIII. 27. dies 28

I.

Jones, Sir Henry 135. His
Death 138
IRELAND, all Parts of that
Kingdom reduced to Obe-
dience. See PERROTT.

K.

Kyllegrew, Sir John 110

M.

Mackarty, Lord 55
Mack-Teage 55, 57
MARY I. 35. dies 44
Moris, Fitz 73, 106
Mounster, Necessary Conside-
rations for the quiet main-
taining of that State. 86

N.

Norryes, Sir John 153, 157

O.

O-Donell, the Irish Rebel 277
O-Neale 145, 198, 269
Oxford, Earl of 24, 55
Ormond, Earl of 28, 64,
66, 79, 81, 82, 157. ar-
rives in England. 140,
147, 157
Osewillinan, Sir Owen 151

B O O K I.

P.

PERROTTS, their Genealogy 14

Sir John, his Per-
son and Qualities descri-
bed, 18, to 23. His Edu-
cation, ib. He corrects the
Insolence of Lord Abergar-
veny, 25. A Second
Quarrel between them,
26. Defends himself a-
gainst two Teomen of the
Guard, upon which King
Henry 8. sent for him to
Court, in Order to promote
him, 27. He is made a
Knight of the Bath by K.
Edward 6. p. 28. He
goes into France with the
E. of Southampton, 29.
Where he was greatly taken
Notice of, 31. Returns to
England, ib. Is promoted,
34. Continues in Favour,
35. Is at length accused of
Protestantism, and sent to
the Fleet, 36. But soon
discharged, ib. Has a Dis-
pute with the E. of Pem-
broke, 39. That Earl be-
comes his Friend, 42. He
is honoured by Q. Eliza-
beth at her Coronation, 45.
Behaves himself gallantly
in a Tournament, 48. He
is made Lord President of
Munster, 49. Overthrows
Fitz-Morris the Irish Re-
bel, and his Adherents,
53. His Behaviour at
Corke, 55. The great
Toil he underwent in dis-
comfiting the Rebels, 60.
Offers to engage Fitz-
Morris in single Combat,
which he like a true Brag-
gadocio, declined. 62.
His Letter to the Earl of Or-

I N D E X.

Ormond, 64. *The Rebel Fitz-Morris submits to the QUEEN's Mercy*, 73. *His Letter to the E. of Warwick*, 74. *He writes to the E. of Suffex*, 77. *Writes a sharp Letter to the E. of Ormond's Officers*, 80. *Four Causes exempted out of the Earl's Patent*, 81. *Returns to England*, 85. *Represents the Estate of Mounster to the Queen*, 86. *Retires into his own Country*, 104. *He is again sent for to Court, and commands against the Spaniards*, 107. *His Noble Entertainment at Falmouth*, 111. *His Arrival in Ireland*, 112. *Finding no Danger from the Spaniard, returns homeward, and is shipwreckt in the Kentish Knacks*, 114. *Takes a Pyrate in his Way home, and arrives safe at Court*, 117. *Complaints against him heard, and proved groundless; he retires again into the Country to settle his own Affairs*, 120. *Has the Sweating-Sickness; yet, at the Request of the Privy Council, goes to Haverfordwest to oppose Wyriott*, 121. *After honourably acquitting himself from the Slanders objected against him he writes to the Queen*, 123. *Returns again to his own Seat*, 129. *Corresponds with many Great Men*, 132. *Is*

made Lord Deputy of Ireland, 135. *He is again accused and acquitted*, 136. *He sets out for his Government of Ireland*, 141.

BOOK II. Ann. 1583.

The Natural Temper of the Irish described, 142, 143. *Perrott goes a Progress*, 146. *Besieges Dunluse*, 159. *After reducing the Country to Obedience, he returns to Dublin, and writes to the Privy Council of England*, 169. *Their Answer to the Lord Deputy*, 186. *He writes to the Justices, and their Civil Officers*, 196. *A pleasant Jest*, 199. *Parallel between the Lord Deputy, Scipio, and Sforza the Great*, 201. *His first Session of Parliament, a Motion made for the Suspension of Poyninge's Act, which was rejected*, 200. *Several Acts passed and the Session concluded, He goes to Ulster*, 203. *Deputes Justices in his Absence, who wrote to Walsingham against him*, 204. *The Lord Deputy's Report of the Encounter between Mr. Francis Stafford and the Scots*, 1585. 206. *His Letter to the Privy Council, concerning his Northern Journey*, 208. *The Queen's and Walsingham's Answers, shewing their Dislike of that Expedition*, 212. *He is much concerned*

I N D E X.

cerned to find all his good Intentions misconstrued. 215. His Letter to James VI. King of Scotland. 216. Many Evil-minded Persons conspire against Him, 218. He sends over to the Privy Council of England, the Reformed Act of Attainder against Desmond, *ibid.* The Queen and Council by secret Complaints, tho' base, incensed against Him, 225. Her Majesty blames him for propounding the Suspension of Poyning's Act; also for the Expence of his two Northern Journies in one Year, &c. 226. Not able to brook the Indignities he lay under, desires to be recalled from his Government of Ireland, 227. Or, that since his own Conduct was blamed, he might have express Instructions how to act, 229. Her Majesty sends him a Warrant for taking Surrenders of Estates, and regranteeing them again by Tenure of Knight's Service in Capite, 230. A Romish Priest, the Origin of the final and fatal Cause of the Lord Deputy's Unhappiness, by accusing Him of High Treason. 231. The Council of Ireland, being advertised of these vile Practices, send over to the Privy Council in England, they sent a Letter to the Lord Deputy, to punish the Offenders. 239. The Lord De-

puty and Lord Chancellor differ. 242. The Queen bearing thereof sends a Pacificatory Letter. 243. The Lord Deputy purges himself of all Imputations in a Letter to her Majesty, 246. Shewing his great Desire to resign his Government, 249. Which was not permitted him, 211. He opens his Second Sessions of Parliament, 1586. *ibid.* This Session concluded, he goes to settle at Westford, 267. The Red-Shankes routed. 268. Complaints against Sir Henry Harrington, 272. He is honourably acquitted. 273. The Lord Deputy continues his Services. Four of his Spies rack'd by the Marquis della Santa Cruce in Spain, of which three of them died, 276. Secret Workings against the Lord Deputy in Ireland, 277. Stops O'Donnell's Rebellion by a Stratagem. 280. Not being able to brook the Indignities offered him, he obtains Leave to be recalled, 1588. p. 281. His Departure. 288. He arrives at his Seat of Carew Castle in Wales. 290. Reflections on his unhappy Fall. 291. A Copy of his Commission as Lord Deputy of Ireland, 295. The Queen's Warrant to the Lords Justices to invest him with that Authority. 297. Another Warrant for his Pub-

I N D E X.

Publick Entertainment.

298. *Her Majesty's Instructions at his Departure.*
 300. *His Letter to the Privy Council of England.*
 302. *His Last Will and Testament.* 306.

S.

- Southampton, *Marquis of* 29
 Stanley, *Sir William* 150
 Sussex, *Earl of* 77, 78

T.

- Tomond, *Earl of* 55, 149, 157
 Torlough Lenough, 145, 198, 289
 Tyrone, *Earl of, Articles between him, and Torlough Lenough.* 269

Q.

- Queen ELIZABETH, *Her Several Letters.* See PERROTT.

R.

- Roch, *Lord* 55, 57, 151
 Roughan, *Sir Dennis, a Popish Priest, convicted of Counterfeiting the Lord Deputy's Hand.* 231
Rebells reduced, and one of the most noted of them, Con- nough Beg Obrian, with six of his Accomplices executed. 149
 Red-Shankes, *their Rebellion.* 267
 — They are routed. 268

W.

- Wallop, *Sir Henry* 203
 Walsingham, *His Letter to Sir John Perrott.* 130, 212
 Waterhouse, *Sir Edward* 153, 157
 Warwick, *Earl of* 74
 William Fitz, *surveys divers Abbeys.* 88
 Winchester, *Marquis of* 24
 Wryott, *a Justice of Peace, his Enmity to Sir John Perrot.* 118. seq.

F I N I S.

